## ||||||||||||||||||||||| 00021349




## MEMOIRS, of


~ Commonly known by the Name of $\cdot$

## - GEORGE PSALMANAZAR;

Reputed Native of FORMOSA.

Written by himself

In order to be published afferthis Death.

$$
\therefore \quad \text { CONTAINING }
$$

An Account of his Education, Travels, Adventures, Connections, Literary Productions, and pretended Converfion from Heathenifm to Chriftianity; which lat proved the Occafion of this being brought over into this Kingdom, and paffing for a Profelyte, and a Member of the Church of Ligand.

$$
\text { LOO ND O. N: } 213+9
$$

PRINTED FOR THE EXECUTRIX.
Sold by R. Davis, in Piccadilly; J. Newberx, in St. 1 sat is Church-Yard; L. Davis, and C. Reymers an 14 born.
MDCCLXIV.

## ||||||||||||||||||||||

 00021349
## ADVERTISEMENT.

The following theets are printed for the benefit of Mr. Pfalmanazar's executrix; who thought it right to prefix his Last Will and Testament, as the beft introduction to them. Mr. Pfalmanazar's. firft intimation of giving this public account of himfelf, may be found under the article Formofa, in the Complete System of Geography *, in which he aflifted as a writert. Where he was born, and . who were his parents, do not yet appear for certain; even in ... thefe pofthumous memoirs he has endeavoured to keep them inviolable fecrets. From circumftances however there is little reafon to doubt, but that he" was a native of France ; indeed he fooke the French language fo well, beyond what is ufual when attained by grammar or travel only, that we do not queftion to fay, He was a Frenchman. His pronunciation had a fpice of the Gafcoin accent, and in that provincial * Vol. ii. p. 251. This work was publifhed in 1747 . (HMem. p. 3390

dialect

## ( ii )

dialect he was fo mafterly, that none but thofe born in the country could equal, none though born there could excel him: for notwithflanding it may be efteemed but a patois, or jargon, yet foreigners find itimpracticable to be fpoken with propriety, and with that fluency and vivacity peculiar to thofe people: and from this we prefume, that fome part of Languedoc may lay claim to his birth. The reverend Mr. Vidnette, who was intimately acquainted with him for upwards of four and twenty years, (and had manny opportunities to obferve him, and to know him well) has communicated thefe conjectures, which the judicious reader, perhaps, will fee fufficiently confirmed from feveral paffages in the memoirs themfelves.

# THE HAST WILLANDTESTA: 

 MENT OF'ME A POOR SINFUL ANDWORTHLESSS CREATURE COMMONLY KNOWN BY THE ASSUMED NAME OF GEORGE PSALMANAZARThy ever bleffed and unerring. Will!, Oh moft gracious, : though offended God!"bee donte by me and all the world, whether for life or death.
Into thy all-merciful hands I commit my, foul, as unto a moft gracious Father, who, though jufty proyoked by my paft vain. and wicked life, but more efpecially fo during the ybuthful fallies of a rafh and unthinking part of it, has yet been gracioully pleafed, by thy undeferved grace and mercy, to preferve me from the reigniing errors and herefies, and the more deplorable apoftacy and infidelity of the prefen age, and enabled me to take a conftant B and

## ( ( 2 )

and ftedfaft hold on the only author of our falvation, thy ever adorable and divine Son Jéfius Chifift, our powerful and meritorious Redeésiner; ,from 'whofe alone,' and allpowerful interceffion and merits (and not from any y the lëaft inherent righteoufnefs of my own's which I heartily abhor as filthy rags in thine all purer, eyes) I hope and beg for pardon and reconciliation, and for a happy refurrection tinto that 'fleffed immortality to which we are redeemed by his moft precious and ineftimable blood. I likewife blefs and adore thy infinite goodnefs for preferving the from innumerable dangers of body and foul; to which this wretched life, but moree particularly by my own youthfur tafhnefs and inconfideration, might fiave expored me, had not thy Divine Providence interpofed in fuch a wonderful manner, as juftly challenges my deepeft admiration and acknowledgment: particularly I am bound to blefs thee for fo timely nipping that ambition and vainglory, which had hurried me through fuch fcenés of impiety and hypocrify, and as the moft effectual antidote againt it, next to thiy divine gràce" baft brought me not gly -
to

## ( 3 )

to prefer, but to delight in a flate of ob: fcurity and lownefs of circumftances, as the fureft harbour of peace and fafety; by which, though the little I have left in my poffeffion be dwindled to fo little value as to be but a poor acknowledgment for the fervices which I have received from my friend hereafter named, to whom I can do no lefs than bequeath it all, yet I hope the will may be accepted for the deed, and that the Divine Providence will fupply to her what is wanting in me. And now, O Father of Mercies, 1 befeech thee for thy dear Son's fake, fo to direct me by thy grace through all the future concerns of this life, that when, where, or in what manner foever it hall pleafe thee to call me out of it, I may be found ready and willing to return my fouls, worthlels as it is of itfelf, to thee who gaveft it; and my death, as well as my latter end, may be fuch as may tend all poffible ways to thy glory, the edification of thy church, and my own eternal comfort. And in hopes there is nothing in this fony laft will that is not agreeable to thine, L leave it to be executed after my death Ry ny worthy and pious friend Sarah ReB' 2 walling,

## (4)

walling, of this pariin of St. Luke, in Mida" diefex, in the manner hereafter mentioned, viz.
I defire that my body, when or whereever I die, may be kept fo long above ground, as decency or conveniency will permit, and afterthards conveyed to the common. burying -ground, and there interred in fome obfcure corner of it, without any further ceremony or formality than is ufed to the bodies of the deceafed penfioners wibere I happen to die, and about the fame time of the day, and that the whole may be performed in the loweft and cheapeft manner. And it is my earneft requeft, that my body be not inclofed in any kind of coffin, but only deceptly laid in what is called a :hell of the loweft value, and.without lid or other covering which may hinder the natural earth from covering it all around:
The books relating to the Univerfal Hiftory, and belonging to the Proprietors, are to be returnell to them according to the true lint of them, which will be found in a blue paper in my account book. All $\neq$ reft being my owi property, together fith
all my houmold goods, wearing apparel, and whatever money fhall be found due to $\dot{\text { me }}$ affer my deceafe, I givè and bequeath to my friend Sarah Rewalling above named, together with fuch manúrcripts as I had written at different times; and defigned to be made public; if they thall be deemed worthy of it, they confifting of fundry effays on fome difficult parts of the Old Teftament, and chiefly written for the ufe of a young Clergyman in the country, and fo unhappily acquainted with that kind of learning, that he was likely to become the but of his fceptical pari(hioners, but being, by this means, furnifhed with proper materials, was enabled to turn the tables upon them.
But the principal manufcript I thought myfelf in duty bound to leave behind, is a faithful narrative of my education, and the fallies of my wretched youthful years, and the various ways by which I was in fome meafure unavoidably led into the bafe and Whameful impofture of paffing upon the world for a native of Formofa, and a conFvert to Chriftianity, and backing it with a fictious account of that illand, and of my
own travels, converfion, \&c. all or moft of it hatched in my own brain, without regard to truth and honefty. It is true, I have long fince difclaimed even publicly all but the fhame and guilt of that vile impofition, yet as lons as I knew there were fill two editions of that fcandalous romance remaining in England, befides the feveral verfions it had abroad, I thought it incumbent upon me to undeceive the world, by unravelling that whole myftery of iniquity in a pofthumous work, which would be lefs liable to fulpicion, às the author would be far out of the influence of any finifter motives that might induce him to deviate from the truth. All that Inall add concerning it is, that it was began above twentyfive years ago with that view, and no other, during a long recefs in the country, accompanied with a threatening difeafe, and fince then continued in my moft ferious hours,' as any thing new prefented itfelf; fo that it hath little elfe to recommend it felf but its plainnefs and fincerity, except here and there fome ufeful obfervations and innuendoes on thofe branches of learning in which I had been concerned, and particú-

## ( 7 )

larly with fuch excellent improvements as might be made in the method of learning of Hebrew, and in the producing a more perfect body of Univerfal Hiftory, and more anfwerable to its title than that which hath already paffed a fecoñ edition. And there, I thought, might be more deferving a place in that narrative, as the ufefulnefs of them would in a great meafure make amends for the fmall charge of the whole. If it therefore thall be judged worth printing, I defire it may be fold to the highert bidder, in order to pay my arrears for my lodgings, and to defray my funeral; and I further requeft that it be printed in the plain and undifguifed manner in which I have written it, and without alteration or embellihment. I hope the whole is written in the true, fincere firit of a perfon awakened by a miracle of mercy, unto a deep fenfe of his folly, guilt, and danger, and is defirous, above all things, to give God the whole glory of fo gracious a change, and to fhew the various fteps by which hisDivine Providencebroughtit about. The whole of the ac.çunt contain' fourteen pages of Preface, and

about ninety-three more of the faid'relation, written in my own hand witha proper title, and will be found in the deep:drawer on the right hand of my white cabinet. 'However, if the obfcurity I have lived in, during fuch a feries of years, hould make it needlefs to revive a thing in all likelihood, fo long fince forgot, I cannot but wifhy that fo much of it was publifhed in fome weekly paper, as might inform the world, efpecially thofe who have ftill by them the above-mentioned fabuilous account of the Inland of Formofa, \&ec. that I have long fince owned both in converfation and in print, that it was no other than a mere forgery of my 'own devifing, atifcandalous impofition on the puclic; and fuch, as I think myfelf bound to beg Gọd and the world pardon for writing, and have been long fince, as I am to this day, and Thall be as long as I live, hedartily forry for : and athamed of:
Thefe il do hereby folemoly declare, and teifify to be my laft Will and Teftament; i and in witnefs thereof have thereto fet my name, on the 23 day of Ampil, in the

## ( 9 )

 $73 \mathrm{~d}^{\text {d y }}$ yar of my age.
G. Pfalmanazar.

The laft Will and Teftament of G. Palmanazar, of Irońmonger-Row, in the Parifh of St. Luke, Middiefex, whenever it thall pleafe God to take him out of this world unto himeelf.

January 1,1762 , being the day of the Circumcifion of our divine Lord, then, bleffed be God, quite found in my mind, though weak in my body, I do ratify and confirm the above particulars of my laft Will made.

## $P \quad R \quad E \quad A^{r} \cdots A B E$

As the defign of my leaving the following Memoirs, is at once to undeceive the world with refpect to that vile and romantic account I formerly gave of myfelf; and of the ifland of Formora, and to make all the amends in my power for that flameful impofition on the public, by leaving behind me this faithful narrative of myfelf, and of the remarkable accidents of my wretched life that led me to it, as well as of thofe that deterred me from perfifting in it ; it-will not be improper here to premife fome of the chief motives that determined me to write tha following fheets, to be printed after my death.
The religious education I had happily received during my tender years, had made fo ftrong an impreffion upon my mind, that, though it did not prove fufficient to preferve me from being unwarily and gradually hurried, by my bwn Afrong paffion, inta

## (. 12 )

into that icandalous pieque of forgery ; yet it never failed of making me condemn myfelf, in my more ferious hours, for every ftep I took towards it; but more particularly for the laft and moft vile fcene of all, my pretended converfion from Heathenifin to Chritianity, and the abominable means I was forced to ufe in order to make it gain credit in the world; fo that I laboured ever after under frequent and bitter remorfes and ftings of confcience, at the reflection of the great load of guilt into which I had fuffered my youthful and unthinking vanity to hurry me.
And fo much the more deep was my fenfe of it, as I fourd my unhappy condition become fo very difficult, and in fome meafure defperate, feeing nothing could effectually extricate me from it but a public acknowledgment of one of the vileft and moft odious impoftures that youth and rafhnefs could be guilty of, which I could not poffibly have made, without expoing myfelf to fhame and danger, and my friculs to the.deepeft mortification and dimpeature, and turning their undeferved care

## ( 13 )

cafe and concern for me into the juften abhorrence and deteftation of me.
Under thefe pungent reflections; which were, however, but too often fmothered by various carnal confiderations, and the: violent hurry of my paffions; I was not without fome hopes that the fame divine goodnefs, which had not fuffered me to: harden into an utter infenfibility of my guilt, might, in his own good time, enable me to furmount all the dreadful difficulties which my carnal mind laid in my way, and finifh that good work which my remorfe gave me caufe to hope was begun by his undeferved grace in me. I wäs not, however, without fome apprehenfions from: a fenfe of my extreme guilt, left that, which I cherifhed under the notion of hope, fhould prove only a vain and ill-grounded prefumption, at leaft I began to fear I had reafon to think it fo, whilf I continued inactive, and depended merely on a few. faint wifhes and prayers, inftead of mak\%ing fome ftrong refolutions and efforts; which might affure me of the divine grace

- .co-operating with them.

In

In this fluctuating and wretched ancertainty I continued fome ycars, not knowing Which way to begin' or go about the arducus and dreaded tafk, when a grievous and lingering fit of illnefs did, in fome meafure; hurry me to it, and made me determine immediately to fet pen to paper, and employ all the: time my diftemper would allow, me; to undo as much as was in my power all the mifchief I had done,: by leaving behind me a faithful account of every thing I could recollect, and that had. been inftrumental to fo fatal and long a train of mifcarriages, in order to fet the whole. impofture in fo true a light, that no part: of the fhame may fall on the guiltlefs, but on the guilty ; and that is chiefly on myfelf.
I fet about it accordingly, and if $I$ did not begin fo neceffary and laudable a work, till driven as it were to it by pain and ficknefs, by the fear of death, and of the divine difpleafure, I hope it will be fo far from. lenfening the credit of the following narrative, that it will rather add weight to it, feeing no time or circumftances can be more

## (15)

more äpt to infpire a'man with the deepert ferioufnefs and fincerity, than thofe I was in, when I wrote the moft confiderable andmortifying part of it.
I thall therefore only add, that my diftemper was a lingering every-other-day ague, which lafted me about fix weeks, and that being then in a fweet place of retirement in the country, at a very good friend's houfe, and taken fufficient care of in all other refpects, I had all the time and opportunity I could wifh for, joined with the propereft difpofition of mind for fuch a tafk, fo that through God's bleffing I was enabled to bring down the Chameful account of my former unfortunate life through the moft hocking and impious fcenes of it, to my arrival into England without any interruption, and I. hope in God with ${ }^{\text {th }}$, ${ }^{\text {at }}$ finterity and ferioufnefs as fuch a relation could require; and my bad ftate of health could infpire me with, ftill taking care before all things to implore the divine affittance of the great fearcher of all hearts every time I fat down to write, that he would direct me to go through the arduous talk with fuch
fuch a due regard to thuth whatever flame reflected on me, as might in all refpects reTound to his glory and entitle me to his pardon and mercy; and to him If give' all the praife, for having enabled me not only to go on fo far with the wifhed for work durizeg my retreat there, but to fefume it fince at proper times, till I had brought it to the defired conclufion.
For being, foor after my recavery; :obliged to returnitoLondon, and ealgaged in' a work; which' neceflarily took up too müch of my time and thoughts, to permit me to go on with this, in the fame regular manner 1 had done in the cointry" (through fill refolved by God ${ }^{*} \mathrm{~s}$ affiftance to go through with it), I determined to fet apart an hoür / at leaft every Wednefday and Friday to revife what I had:wrote, and to continue the narrative as miny themory ferved; not doubting but the folemnity of the faft, joined to the prayers and other meditations I had appropriated for thefe: two days, in the method of devotiơn I was throuigh God's blefling entered intd," would prove "effectual means to obtain that fpirit" of fincerity and ferioufnefs which

## ( 17. ).

which I earneftly winied might go through the remainder, as 1 was confcious it had done in the former part, whilft I laboured under my illnefs.
I went on accordingly for fome time with it, till the other bufinefs I had in hand, and fome other avocations, as well as fometimes an indifpofition of the mind, unhinged me from my method oftener than I wifhed; for at fuch times I found myfelf fo unfit to purfue it, that I plainly faw it was better to difcontinue it till I could recover my former frame. This occafioned fometimes an intermiffion of two or more weeks as to the writing part, though'the-matter was still fo prefling on my mind; that it only gave me an opportunity, either of recollecting fome things I had omitted, or of gathering fref materials for the fequel. But as my aim was only to give an account of what either chiefly hurried "me on through fuch a long train of the moft unaccountable follies and vanities, or of what brought me to a fenfe and abhorrence of them, I have omitted a great number of the former, as rather apt to difguft than entertain or inform a fober reader, and

## ( 18 )

confined myfelf to the latter, as the more likely to prove inftrudtive and ufeful to bim. And I fhall not be very folicitous what judgment thofe will pafs on this narrative, who are ftrangers to religion and the various ways of the Divine Providence ins reclaiming finners, firft by driving, and then drawing them to bimfelf, provided I can acquit myfelf to my own confcience that I have taken all poffible care to write it with that fincerity and faithfulners that I would wifh it to be done at my laft moments, and with no other view than that of making fuch a full and ample acknowledgment' of my great folly and guilt, as my confcience told me I ought to do for having fo long and fo thamefully impofed upon the world, as well as of God's fingular goodnefs which infpired me with the defign, and hath enabled me to: go through it in the manner I have done.
The reafons of my not chufing to have it publifhed during my life, befides thofe already hinted, will be feen in the requel, and I hope will be thought folid and fatisł factory, efpecially as it hath given me an opportunity of continuing the latter (and :

## (ig )

as I hope in God) the much better part of my life, and of adding to it feveral ufeful particulars, which the reader will find there ; fuch as my eafy and expeditious method of ftudying, and attaining to a fuller knowledge of the Hebrew rongue; fundry curious and inftructive obfervations relating to fome of the works I have been engaged in, in the learned way, particularly in that long and laborious one of the Univerfal Hiftory, of the defign, beginning, and purfuit, together with the difficulties, mifcarriages, faults; and other matters relating to both editions of it; and I have been the better able to give fuch an account of the whole as may be of ufe to the public, efpecially to the purchafers, as I have been concerned in it from the beginning. The reader will likewife find the later part of this narrative interfperfed with many other particular accidents which bave happily contributed not only to keep me fteady in my refolutions and change of life, but which have likewife infenfibly led me into an more regular way of thinising and acting; and, as true repentance begins in the change of the heart, and ends at the reformation

## -( 20 )

of the finner's life, I may humbly hope that I have not been negligent in finding out and ufing the moft effectual helps and means, nor failed of the divine bleffing on them, which are promifed to all fincere per nitents. Though the fear I was in, left too particular an account of them hould be deemed, by the cenforious, as oftentatious and pharifaical, hath obliged me to conceal a great number of them, which might perhaps have otherwife proved very encouraging to people in my condition; not doubting but to thofe who are fincere in their repentance and refolutions, the fame Divine Providence will fuppeditate all the neceflary helps and directions as their cafe requires, even as it hath gracioufly done to me.
All I would add by way of encouragement to perfons in my unhappy circumftances (and worfe or more dangerous no man could hardly be in than I was) is not to let the greatnefs of their guilt, or the difficulties of the duties of repentance, deter, but rather invite him to the throne of mercy, through the merits of our Divine Redeemer ; for how dark and gloomy fo--
ever the profpect of fo extraordinary a change may appear at firt, as every thing doth to thofe that are fled from the broad. fun-fhine into fome dark place; yet thofe thick and difcouraging mitts will gradually difappear, and every object that at firft raifed our fears will grow more hopeful and comfortable, when we call to mind that there is mercy fufficient in God, merits enough in Chrift, power more than fufficient in the Divine Spirit, room enough in heaven, fcope enough in the evangelical promifes, and the moft endearing invitations in the Gofpel, to bring the greateft finners to God of infinite mercy and compafion; fo that there can be thenceforth no condemnation to them that, with faith and repentance, apply to him for pardon and grace through the merits of his ever-bleffed Son, and are all proper means and helps. to render himfelf a fit object of it.
We muft not however fuppofe that the bleffed effects of fuch a repentance will be fo foon felt by us as we could wifh, or that the duties of felf-denial, felf-abhorrence, fafting, folitude, meditation, felf-exami-- nation, \&c. will become eafy and delightC 3
ful

## ( 22 )

ful as foon as we are entered into a religious regimen : we muft, on the contrary; expect them to appear difficult and gloomy at the beginning, in order to excite ous $\because$ faith and reliance on the Divine affiflance, which draws us not with an irrefifitible force; but with the cords of men, and the bands of love (Hof. xi. 4.) We muft likewife expect to meet with frequent foils and backllidings in order to make us more diligent and watchiful; more fenfible of our own weaknefs, and more intent on that help which comes from above. By this means, we frall likewife be happily preferved from that pride and prefumption, which is but too apt to infinuate itfelf into the minds of new converts; for experience plainly fhews, that thofe two dangerous vices will be apt to fpring, not only out of our fins and paffions, but likewife out of our very virtues and graces, if not duly kept down, by the fenfe or experience of our own infirmities and impotence.
It was an excellent caution of a pious clergyman: "Don't prefume; you are nòt " yet come to a ftate of Chriftian perfec"r tion : don't defpair; you are in the way. ${ }^{3}$

## ( 23 )

": to it." So that whatever difficulies or difcouragements we may meet with in our progrefs, how hort foever we may come of our duty, or whatever frailties, or even vices we may fill be prone to, which may::... either divert or retard our fpeed, we may. ftill comfort ourfelves with the hopes, that we are in a way of growing better, and that the ufe of thofe means hath not only preferved us in a great meafure from growing a great deal worfe, but enabled us to rife after every fall, if it hath not fometimes made even thofe falls rebound to a greater heighth of grace, by teaching us, from every fuch ftep, to tread more fure for the future; and what a comfortable profpect muft this yield to a man that hath made any progrefs in this happy way, to fee God's ftrength magnified in his own weaknefs, efpecially when he adds thereto this blifsful confideration, that the fame all-meritorious blood which was thed to expiate all his wilful, if truly repented, tranfgreffions, will much more effectually atone for all his involuntary defects.
Thus much I thought incumbent on'me to fay on this head, becaule whatever our $\mathrm{C}_{4}$ ' free-
freethinkers may boaft of the fifficient power of reafon to reclaim a man from a long vicious courfe, from the prevalency of evil habits and conftitutional vices, whatever powerful influence they may afcribe to the notion of eternal rectitude, \&c. to reduce a man that hath deflected fo wide and far fromit, without any of thofe fupernatural helps above-mentioned; yet I am well affured, that the former, withoue the latter, would have proved (to me at leaft, if not to any man in my condition) rather a determent than an effectual means; for what hopes or likelihood could there be that a wretch, who had, by his impetuous paffion, been hurried into the commiffion of fuch a feries of impieties againft his own reafon and confcience, thould ever. be able to extricate. himfelf from fuch a flavifh flate by his own bafe natural power? What efficacious help could he expect from his own'reafoning faculties, which, however cried up by others, he had found, by fad experience; fo weak and impotent, that the mort they could do for him, was to: make him condemn himfelf, without being able to rectify or refift the violent impulfes

## ( 25 )

impulfes of his' predominant vice? Had, indeed, his knowlèdge of mankind furnifhed him with any remarkable inftance of the prevalency of reafon, above a favourite vice, it might have given him fome encouragement; but when he fees, on the contrary, that thefe ftrenuous defpifers of all fupernatural helps, equally enllaved to fome favourite paffion, and only differing from him perhaps in degree; the moft he could expect his reafon to do for him, would be to keep his own under fome reftraint and decorum, till time and indulgence had quite. exhauted them.
But what poor encouragement is this to one in my dangerous cafe? how inconfiderable the change or remorfe? what poor'fatisfaction to the world for fo vile an impofition, and what likelihood that it would procure a pardon from an offended God, or calm the ftings of a wounded confcience? And how much happier was it for me that I was directed to. look up for and depend on a fuperior affiftance, and inftead of trufting to fuch a broken reed of my reafon and ftrength, to apply myfelf to that Supreme

- Being, whofe grace alone could work fuch
an extraordinary change in the heart, give an effectual bleffing on my weak efforts, and keep me fteady in thofe refolutions which he had infpired me with, as well as in the ufe of thofe means he hath provided and prefcribed to us!
I gladly repeat it, that nothing lefs than the hopes of his promifed grace could have induced me to endeavour after it, and nothing but a full reliance on the merits of a Divine Interceffor could have invited me to cry to him for pardon and acceptance; and, on the other hand, nothing but the obtaining it could have fupported me under my doubts and fears, my dificulties and difcouragements, nor enabled me to perfevere in, and nothing lefs than the continuance and increafe of it could have brought a work of fuch extraordinary and undeferved mercy to perfection.
I cannot therefore but think it the greatert injury that can be done, to perfons who have unhappily fwerved from the paths of virtue and religion, to make them depend folely on the ftrength of their rational faculties for an effectual change, and to in-. fpire them with a difregard for the more


## ( 27 )

powerful-means and motives which the Gofpel offers to them, and which, upon experience, will be found the only ones that can bring it about. And may what I have here faid infpire every awakened fioner, (who hath tried in vain the fuccefs of the former) with the more comfortable hope and ftedfaft confidence, in the never-failing efficacy of the latter.
Having faid thus much on the fubject of the divine grace offered to us in the Gofpel; it will doubtlefs be expected that I fhould give fome farther account of my private belief fo far as relates to the controverfy between the church of Rome, in which I was educated, and that of England, in the communion of which I have lived, ever fince my coming into England. And here I mult confefs, to my very great hame, that though I did for feveral years profefs myfelf a zealous member of the latter, yet the prejudices of my education, and the general courfe of my ftudies, did fill ftrongly incline me in favour of the former:s infomuch that neither the many books of controverfy I had read on that fubject, nor my frequent difputes with priefts and others of that communnion

## (28)

munion (in which, however, I had ftill vaie nity enough to give the preference to my arguments againt it) could fix my wavering. mind, much lefs could I be induced to think it fo corrupt and dangerous, antichriftian and idolatrous as it was with fo much warmth maintained to be by moft proteftant writers and preachers; infomuch that this uncharitable zeal of theirs made me ftill more doubtful whether the reafons they urged were fufficient to juftify their feparation from it.
I was indeed fincerely perfuaded, from all that I had read or heard, that the church of England was by far the beft and fafent of all the proteftant churches; but that it was really more fo than that of Rome, I was far enough from being fatisfied in my mind; fo that there was almoft as little fincerity in my pretended zeal for and conftant communnion with it, than in my pretended converfion to it : the truth of it is, that I was too young and heedlefs, vain and conceited, to lie open to conviction, and that I read and heard the arguments on both fides, rather to fill my head than to rectify my heart, or fix my belief; fo that I muft con-

## ( 29 )

fels that I acted at that time a very fhame, ful and infincere part, in the preference $I$ fo ftrenuoufly gave to the one above the other, which, though ever fo juftly deferved, did not appear then in that light to me.
In this carelefs, though impious and abominable, fufpence I continued fome years (which, upon the whole, was but of a piece with the other and more flagrant part of my impofture) till I came to read a treatife, intituled, the case stated between a nobleman of thechurch of rome, and a gentleman of the church of england, in which I thought I found the controverfy fully and clearly decided in favour of the latter. And I gave the heed to the arguments on both fides, not only as they appeared to me to be ftated with the greateft clearnefs and impartiality, but as I had been long acquainted with Mr. Charles Lefley, the reputed author of that book, who was univerfally allowed to be one of the learnedeft men in that controverfy, and had moreover given the ftrongeft proofs of his probity and fincerity, as well as of his capacity and unbiaffed

## ( 30 )

unbiaffed judgment; of all which I was fo fully apprifed, that no book that: I had read did ever contribute fo much, if not to fix my wavering mind, yet at leaft to make me think more ferioufly on the fubject, and to give mylelf up to a frefh and more clofe application to that controverfy, and the reading of all the beft authors who had, or thould afterwards write on either fide; for I doubted not but we fhould foon hear of one or more anfwers from fome of the beft pens from that, fide, againft it. However, though I never could learn of any that was made to it, it did not divert me from my purpofe. And indeed $I$ found myfelf fo ftrongly prepoffeffed in favour of the author, that I had reafon to feardeft the impreffion which his book had made upon my mind, thould be owing to that, rather than to the validity of his arguments, until I had read over afrefh all that had been urged in favour of the oppofite, fide. . But here again, though I went over them with the greateft attention and fincerity, I found the difpute fo ftrangely managed, and clog $\rightarrow$ ged with fuch elaborate learning and fophiftry, fuch controverted quotations from

## (3i)

the Scriptures and ancient fathers, fuch unchriftian charges of forgery, and perverting the fenfe of thofe authors, and other uncharitable language, as rather bewildered. than convinced my mind; fo that the only fruit I reaped from all my reading (befides a ftrong prejudice againft thofe of the Romilh fide, whom I obferved to deal moft in that unfair way of difputing) was, that there could be no fafety in trufting to my own judgment in a matter of fuch valt concern; and that it was next to impoffible for men, frail as we are, and warped by our own paffions and prejudices, to wade through fuch formy feas of controverfy, without an extraordinary affiftance from the fountain of all light and truth. I have accordingly made it my conftant care ever fince, that is, for above thefe twenty-five years, to apply myfelf fervently, and to depend wholly upon that divine guide for a deliverance from all errors of faith and practice; and for fuch an increafe of his light and grace as may confirm me in the belief of all his faving truths, obedience toall his commands, fincere communion with his holy catholic church, and a tender and charitable concern

## ( $32^{\prime}$ )

for all thofe who have fwerved from it. To thefe petitions (which I conftantly offered up to God, not only morning and night for a long feries of years, but in a more copious and fuller form, fuitable to my own exigence, on more folemn, that is, on faft and feftival days) I hope is owing, that inward fatisfaction which I have fince been bleffed with, in my more fteady and fincere communion with the church of England, and in the preference I now give it to all othes churches; and, as 1 hope in God, without the leaft breach of charity to any of the reft. And indeed by all that I have read, or been able to judge, I have been more and more convinced that theirs and ours are all in an imperfect fate, though fome more than others, and that they are like to continue $f$ fo till the rifing again of the fun of righteoufnefs upon us, whofe brightnefs will then enlighten at once both hemifpheres, and who will then not only reform whatever is amifs in his myftical body, but bring the Jews, Turks, and Heathen into it; till then we can only in charity bewail whatever errors we fee in them, either in faith or practice, and pray to God to reform them

## ( 33 )

in his own good time, and to be merciful to thofe whofe hearts are fincere towards him, whatever involuntary miftakes they may labour under.
Infallibility in the church were a bleffing as much to be wifhed for in this uncertain ftate, as it is fallely challenged by the church of Rome; but fince reafon and experience fhew it to be denied to us, and many fincere members of that church do privately bewail the errors that are crept into it, though loath to own them a fufficient caufe for our feparation from it, it highly becomes us all to make the beft ufe of that guide which God hath given us, viz. his divine revealed Will and Word, without breaking the bond of Charity with thofe who interpret it in a different way from us: for though, in that refpect, we may juftly enough acknowledge in the words of our church's.confeffion, that "we have" all, more or lefs, "erred and frayed like loft " fheep," and thàt perhaps chiefly through our "f following too much the devices and "defires of our hearts;" yet as God is the only judge how far every man is faulty in that refpect, fhould we not be very

D careful

## ( 34 )

careful to pafs fuch a favourable judgment on them; as may entitle us to the fame indulgence from the judge of all hearts? Should it not at leaft (feeing we are all alike fallible, and fland in need of the fame charitable allowance) make us exceeding fearful how we do, by our anathemas and other unchriftian denunciations againft thofe that differ from us, expofe ourfelves to the fame fevere fentence, and meet, with the fame meafure at the laft day, as we have fo freely dealt unto them? This uncharitable condemning firit, which hath fo long reigned among Chriftians of all denominations, I have long fince looked upon as the moft dangerous error a man can fall into, as it is indeed the moft open violation of the grand characteriftic of the Gofpel.
I have been ready to fhudder when I have heard fome of our preachers inveigh, in that uncharitable way, againft their Fellowchriftians, or even againft our modern Freethinkers and Deifts. Some of them I have heard and read, who could not fpeak or write of them without ridicule and derifion, inftead of that pity and concern which is due to perfons in that dangerous ftate ; and, .
for

## - ( 35 )

for that reafon, have always thought them the moft unfit to teach others, who had all the true fpirit of Chriftianity to feek, and can allow themfelves to exuilt and droll over the errors and frailties of their fellowcreatures; which even common humanity forbids us to think of or mention without the utmoft ferioufnefs and compaffion. This uncharitable and untimely zeal, even in-controverfies of the higheff nature, doth fill more mirchief in another way, by magnifying and aggravating the differences between the contending fides, which ferves only to render them the more irreconcileable; whereas a true chriftian firit will, from a fenfe of its own infirmity, rather. chufe to excufe and palliate them, and will be extremely careful to foften and fmooth every thing that is offered in the oppoficion, in order to render it lefs irkfome and ineffectual.
Had our divine Lawgiver defigned that we fhould have all agreed, in the main points of religion, or had he feen any thing fo finful and dangerous in our difagreement about it, his infinite wifdom and goodnefs would, doubtlefs, either have given us

D 2 greater

## ( $3^{6}$ )

greater helps and brighter faculties, or would have taken care to have his revelation made ro plain and obvious, that none but the willful and perverife could have erred from it. In either of which cafes, where would there havè been any room for that charitable and forbearing fpirit which is the peculiar characteriftic of Chrift's true difciples, and is fo acceptable to him? not towards" thofe that agreed with us from the fame motives we agreed with them ; nor yet much lefs towards thofe that differ from us, when it would have plainly appeared, that not their infirmity or ignorance, but their pride and pervefenefs made them do fo. May we not therefore fafely conclude, that God fuffers us to continue in this imperfect and uncertain ftate, and unavoidable diverfity of opinions, in order to give us an opportunity of exercifing a virtue, which is of all others the moft exalted and moft acceptable to him, as being the neareft to its divine original.
God, who is emphatically filed love; and hath been beyond all poffible conception diffufive of it to us, hath, at the fame time, affured us, that the beft returns we can make ${ }^{o}$

## ( 37 )

to him for it, or he expects from us, is to make our own as extenfive as we can to all that bear his divine image: herein therefore is this moft excellent virtue, this charitable fpirit dilplayed in a manner moft nearly refembling his own, when (initead of treating thofe that differ from us with contempt, fournefs, or impatience, which is bafe and felfifh, or with ill language, opprobrious names, unjü̆t refections, curfes, and anathemas, which is truly diabolical) we think and look upon them with the fame candor, benevolence, and compaffionate concern, as we fhould wifh to be fhewn to us were their cafe our own; when we make the mof charitable allowances for their infirmities and miftakes, and are ready to afcribe their errois to the weaknefs of their underfanaing, wrong education, or any thing rather than to the perverfenefs of their will; when, by our behaviour, our prayers, and good wilhes, we frive to convince them that all our endeavours to reclaim them from their errors, do really fring from our tender fenfe of their danger, and from fuch a fincere and difinterefted concern for their Ypiritual welD 3 fare,

## ( $3^{8}$ )

fare, as no oppofition or obftinacy on theif part fhall be able to leffen in the leaft, becaufe that being a duty enjoined by God, we cannot in any cafe difpenfe with it, without danger of incurring his difpleafure; and lafly, when we can, in fpight of all their obftinacy or untowardnefs, make them fenfible, by our words and deportment, that we wifh their happinefs as heartily as ever; and that, after having tried our beft efforts in vain, we heartily recommend them thill - to that merciful God, whofe equity and goodnefs will acquit and approve every man who confcientioully feeks for, and endeavours after the beft light, and is ready to, obey it as far as he is able to obferve it. Could we once make this the aim and refult of all our religious differences and difputes, they would, inftead of a bane, prove a froong cement and fupport to Chrintianity; we might then differ one from another without breach of charity, as friends love one another, though of different tempers, complexions, \&c. Our unbelievers would be fo far from taking an advantage from them to cry it down, that they muft be forced to admire and efteem it for the blef-

fed effects it produced in mens hearts and lives, how wide foever their judgments differed in other cafes; whereas, whilf we make them the fad occafion of faction and ftrife, of felfinners and malignity, or of unreafonable impofitions on the faith and practice, of flander, hatred, perfecution; \&c. it can hardly be expected that our fceptics and infidels will be candid or ingenuous enough to perceive; or at léaft to own, that all this unchriftian behaviour is diametrically oppofite to the Gofpel.
It is indeed much to be wifhed, that fome of the ancient fathers had not mingled fo much of this antichriftian fpirit with their otherwife pious and learned writings, and had not done, as the great St. Jerome owns himfelf, in his epiftle to Pammachius; to have done againft Jovinian, that he had lefs regarded what was exactly to have been urged againft him, than what might be laid as a charge againft him. How much of our now reigning fcepticifm and infidelity may have been owing to fuch an unchriftian fpirit, propagated and improved as it hath, been in fubfequent ages, and how much fuch uncharitable writers and preachers of
$\mathrm{D}_{4}$ con-

## ( 40 )

controverfy will have to anfwer for it at the lait day, I will not prefume to determine; but thus much I may venture to infer from it, that thofe Boanerges did chufe the moft unlikely means of recommending Chriftianity to the unbelieving part of the world, (if fuch was their real defign) when they frove to propagate it in a way fo diametrically oppofite to the meek and benevolent finit of its divine author.
This fingle confideration, joined to the fenfe had of the weaknefs of our, underftanding and incapacity of judging in matters of fo high a nature, hath long ago made me very careful of condemning or cenfuring any church or fect for holding any tenets which my confcience could not readily join in. We may indeed expofe ourfelves to a feverer judgment, by pafling too rafh or uncharitable a one on others, but can never run the fame rifk by the moft candid and favourable allowance we can make for them. And, after all, what have we to do to judge thofe that differ from us, fince both they and we mult ftand accountable' to him only, who is the unerring judge of all hearts?

${ }_{3}$ can..

## ( 4 x )

I cannot forbear adding, that the almort unfurmountable difficulties I have found to come to the bottom of the greater part of our difputed points, and the little certainty or fatisfaction I have reaped from reading of moft controverfies, clogged and difguifed as they are with fophiftry and endlefs fubtilities, and managed with fo little appearance of impartiality and charity, have made me fuch a Pyrrhonian in polemic divinity, that I have not dared to allow myfelf the liberty of cenfuring thofe who held what I thought an error in faith or prectice, or even to pronounce it to be fuch, though I have been wanting in neither zeal nor courage to oppofe any fuch on all proper occafions, and to give the beft reafon I could. for my diffenting from them; and I much queftion whether, in the imperfect anduncertain flate we are in, reafon or religion will permit us, much lefs require of us, to proceed farther; and whether a more pofitive or categorical declaration doth not argue fomething worfe than prepoffeffion and narrownefs of mind, and will not be liable to be condemned as an unchriftian warp of the will.

## ( 42 )

The tranfubflantiation of the church of Rome, is a doctrine that appears the moft fhocking to fenfe and reafon. That of abfolute predeftination among the greater part of the reformed churches, appears not only the moft oppofite to the divine attributes of love, goodnefs, juftice, \&c. but to ftrike at the root of the Chrifian religion, which is founded on the love of God; for how is it poffible for' a man to look upon fo arbitrary a being as that doctrine reprefents him, but with the utmoft awe and dread, even though he was ever fo fully perfuaded that himfelf was one of the predeftinate? and how much more fo the more be is removed from fuch a perfuafion? Neverthelefs, as I have all poffible reafon to believe that there are myriads of men of learning ande probity who behold thofe two doctriness in a quite different light, and not only hold them as neceffary articles of their faith, but are ready to condemi all that do not, why fhould I be fo partial to my own judgment, as to think it more infallible than theirs, or venture to pafs the fame uncharitable fentence on them for beliexing which I blame them in my confcience for

## (. 43 )

pronouncing againft me for not believing them?
With what juftice can I charge the former with idolatry for worhipping what they fincerely believe to be the real body of our divine and adorable Redeemer? Or howcan I tax the latter with impiety for profeffing a doctrine, which I ought in charity to think they would abhor, did it appear to them as derogatory of Gad's goodnefs and juftice, as it doth to me, efpecially as the belief of both is founded on their implicit belief, (and confequently; and at the worft, on a miftaken interpretation) of the Holy Scripture?
Is it not therefore morefafe and more chriftian for me to content myfelf with giving my reafons in the frongeft manner I am able, for my diffent from them, than to charge them, eyen in thought, with wilfully perverting the word of God, and with all the guilt and infamy of impofing damnable errors, under pain of damnation? It may be indeed truly faid, that this kind of retaliation is what not only reigns too much in mort chriftian churches, eyen to this day, put hath proved the frequent occafion

## ( 44 )

of the moft horrid perfecutions and anti, chriftian cruelties: But is it not therefore the more to be avoided and abhorred by all tiue Chriftians for the mifchief it hath done, and is ftill able to do, to the Gofpel, and for the fcandal it reflects on the beft religion in the world?
Ought it not to be a matter of the deepeft grief and concern to a good Chritian, to fee the moft gracious defigns of heaven towards mankind thus miferably obftructed and fruftrated, and fo great a part of mankind deprived of the ineftimable benefits of it, by an untimely zeal, the moft oppofite to the firit of our meek and divine Redeemer, and the moft condemned, both by his precepts and example? Doth not right reafon. itfelf, as well as our natural felf-love, tell everyman how careful he ought to be not to be miftaken in a matter of fuch infinite concern? And.fuppofe we have ever fo much reafon to think thofe that differ from us are really fo, muft we therefore take upon us to cenfure and condemn, to anathematize and perfecute them, whom reafon and chárity fhould rather incline us to pity and pray for, whether their error be wilful ar
involuntary, which can only be known to God ?
I have chofen to inflance in the doctrines of tranfubftantiation and predeftination, as they appear the moot chocking and antifcriptural to every one, except thofe who believe them; neverthelefs, from a fenfe of my fallibility, as well as of the weaknefs of human reafon, I fhould be very fearful of pronouncing them abfolutely falfe (much lefs to call them anti-chriftian, damnable, \& cc.) their appearing fo to me is a fufficient reafon for my declaring my diffent from them, but doth not authorize me to pronounce thofe that believe them to be guilty before God for fo doing.
Were I to indulge myfelf in the liberty of cenfuring or condemning any chriftian church, for any thing either in theirfaith or practice, it would be that uncharitable authority they affume of condemning, as hereticks, \&cc. all thofe who cannot believe as they do.
And yet I own it highly neceffary that there fhould be, in every particular church (fince it is not given to us in this imperfect flate to be thus happily united in our belief)

## ( $46^{\circ}$ )

a fated rule of faith, a fummary of what is to be principally believed and practifed by all its members; but then care fhould be taken not to multiply thofe articles beyond what is abfolutely neceffary, nor yet to impore them with any fuch damnatory claufes againft recufants as are commonly ufed by moft churches, to the great detriment and difcredit of Chriftianity, and the intimidating and bewildering the fincere and well-meaning Chriftians, who are incapable of judging of the merit of thofe controverfies, and being commonly by far the moft numerous, are entitled to a more charitable and tender regard than to be obliged blindly to believe and act as their church prefrribes, or be liable to be refcinded from it.
Even in thofe articles wherein our church is obliged to declare its diffent from any of the tenets of others, methinks they might and flould in charity content themfelves with giving their reafons, in the plaineft and concifeft manner, for their diffent, and with fuch impartial candor and tendernefs as fhould rather infpire its members with 'pity and concern for, than prejudice and hatred

## ( 47 )

hatred againt, thofe that differ from them : and, above all things, they fhould all be exceedingly fearful of charging their antagonifts, and their tenets, with a greater degree of guilt and danger than is confiftent with truth, and with that fipirit which condemns and abhors all mifreprefentation and opprobrious language as the moft defrructive, next to ill offices or perfecution, of all errors that a Chriftian can fall into.
It is plainly the want of this meek chriftian fpirit, that makes men to intermix fo much deadly acrimony in all their difputes and differences, as ferves only to deftroy the fmall fparks of charity that are left among us. But where the love of Chrift unites our hearts in the bonds of peace and mutual benevolence, no difference in religion, however greatly mifreprefented or aggravated by untimely zeal, will ever be able to diffolve the tye, or create the leaft difagreement or indifference in their affections.
There are many things in the Greek, and Roman church, in that of Geneva, and Augfburgh, \&c. which my confcience will not permit me to join with; but which $I$, at

## (. 48 )

the fame time, firmly hope and believe will not be laid to their charge by the merciful fearcher of all hearts, who rather pities than punihes the involuntary errors of his frail creatures: and were there none better to be found in the chriftan world than thofe, I hould think myfelf obliged to join communion with that which appeared to me the freeft from them, rather than to ftand by myfelf, and be deprived of the benefit of church-fellowhip, provided nothing was impofed upon me by it that my confcience thought finful. I look upon them all (excepting fuç as deny the fundamental articles of Chriftianity, efpecially the merits and mediation of our divine Redeemer) as fo many branches of Chrift's church; and tho' fome are more corrupted than others, yet all united into one body, of which he himilef is the fupreme head and governor, and is acknowledged by them as fuch. However, I own that the church of England bath, in all refpects; appeared to me, ever fince I have made myfelf more ferioully acquainted with its faith and prac-tice, the beft reformed and freeff from every thing that could reftrain me from her com munion,

## ( 49 )

munion, efpecially as I am a layman: for with refpect to her clergy, I think fome of the injunctions the lays them under to be fuch as I could by no means fubmit to, and which the more confcientious among them would, I believe, be glad to be freed from, if it could be done confiftently with the honour, and fafety of its eftablifhment. I am far from intending by this to caft any blemifh on the reverend order, or on the firft reformers; but as it hath given fo much occafion for cavil and difrelpectful reflections againft both, I could heartily. wih to fee it effectually removed. In other refpects I have long fince had a vaft efteem and regard for her liturgy, facraments, ordination, and other ordinances, that it bath been, and is fill, a matter of regret to me, whenever bufinefs or any other impediment hath deprived me of the benefit of them. Her epifcopacy, though fo much difregarded by other proteftant churches, and cried down, as invalid, by that of Rome, hath long ago been looked upon by me, not only as a fingular bleffing, but as a neceffary conftituent of a church, the divine " inftitution of which hath been, in my opi-

## (.50)

nion, as fully proved againft the former, as the validity of its ordination hath againft the latter; and all I have to wihh for her fake, is, that the was as happy in the choice, appointment, and promotion of her prelates; and that the Congès Delire were fomething more than a phrafe without meaning: however, that needs not to debar us, in this imperfect fate, from enjoying the benefits of their facred function to very good purpofes; nor dif́courage us from wifhing and praying for a reformation of thofe abules which worldly politicians have introduced into it.
Moft people indeed, who look upon the evil to lie in human nature-itfelf; have little hopes to fee any amendment to it, till we have a new heaven and a new earth, efpecially as thofe in whofe power the remedy is, are moft interefted to fupprefs it: But a good Chriftian will look higher up than thofe at the helm for fo defirable a change, fince, as I believe, we have much more reafon to hope for it from the interpofition of heaven, than any of the neighbouring churches which labour under the fame difficulties. As for thofe countries abroad, which have fecularized

## (51)

rized their bifhopricks, \& © c. they will hardly charge our church with abufing hers worfe than they have done theirs; fo that; upon the whole, it appears in all refpects to fand upon a better and more hopeful foot than any other I know, with all its imperfections and defects.
I cannot difmifs this point without taking fome notice of a charge which fome of our prefent Methodifts have laid to it, viz. its having departed from fome of its ancient doctrines, particularly thofe of predeftination and free-grace, or -imputed righteoufnefs. With refpect to the former, it doth not appear that the compilers of the feventeenth article ever defigned to impore the belief of it as neceflary to falvation, but only to define the term of predeftination, as frenuoufly maintained by the reformed churches of Geneva, Switzerland, Holland, \&cc. leaving it to the option of every one either to affent or diffent from it: much lefs do they feem to have infifted upon the belief of it in that full and extenfive fenfe (and including abfolute reprobation) in which the Supralapfarians explain it, which doctrine is now jufly rejected by

E 2 molt

## ( 52 )

mof divines and members of this churctr. Mr. Whitefield's clarge of innovation is therefore unjün"; and it is well known, that. fie did not think otherwife of it, till he was. Tperfuaded into thatt opinion upon his going to preach in America : however, çould it be fuppofed that the firt reformers really $\because$ defigued it in that fupralapfarian fenfe, I thould have comniended any fynod who
$\therefore$ Ahould have fince ithen ordered it to have been erazed, feeting the truth of a chrifian doctine is not fötuded on the aphion or authority of any mën, but op the evidence of Holy Writ.
With refpect to the other charge, viz. inherent and imputed righteoufnefs, it muft be owned, that our fermons and books of devotion feem rather to run to much in cominendation of good works, as to lead prople to lay a greater frefs on the former thän on the lateier, and to conffite more on their good deeds than on the merits of Chrift, which is certainly a dangerous miftake, fince our hope of acceptance and falvation muft be chiefly founded upon the latter, without which our beft duties could never be acceptable from fich frail and 'finful

## ( 53 )

finful creatures to a God of infinite holinefs.
It were therefore to be winhed, that our preachers and divines would take fome more: care to caution their hearers and readers, whenever they infift on the neceffity of good works, againtt their putting their chief de-? pendence on them, and to remind them that the alone meris and intercefion of our divine Redeemer can give them their faving efficacy. But though this laft point is not fo. frequently inculcated and infifted upon as could be wifhed, yet that it is always underfood and implied, is certain, becaufe it always was, and is fill acknowledged to be a fundamental article of the church of England; fo that it is unjuft to charge it with having departed from it; and yet this is the common cry of thefe modern enthufiafts, who are every where denouncing damnation againf all thofe who infift on or put any dependence on inherent righteoufnefs: but how unjufly and falfely, let the apoftle St. Paul inform them, who exprefly tells us (I Córinth. iii. $11-15$.) that fuch men fhall be faved, though with

- great difficulty; or, as he expreffes it, foE 3 as


## ( 54 )

is by fire, though not one of their works fhould ftand the fiery trial ; for how precarious foever the fuperftructure be, whilft Chrift is the foundation, he cannot but be fafe that builds his hopes upon it, whatever - ftraw, fubble, or other trath he may ine termix with it.
However, I do not doubt but this falfe alarm of the Methodifts hath proved of fome ufe to many Chriftians, as I own it hath to me, and hath awakened them into a better and humbler opinion of their inherent righteoufnefs, than they perhaps had before. As to my own particular, tho' I always depended folely on the merits of a crucified Redeemer for pardon and acceptance, and looked upon all our beft fervices to be deftitute of the leaft worth, but what they receive from him; yet I have been warned, by this late outcry, to put lefs ftrefs and confidence in them, and to look upon them rather as the evidence of our fincerity and falvation, than as the means or foundation of it, rather as our qualification for heaven (on which account we may fafely wilh, endeavour, and pray that we may more and more abound in them) than as things ca-

## ( 55 )

pable to give us any title to it, which nothing can do but the imputed righteoufnefs of Chrif.
Thus much I thought incumbent on me to declare concerning my notions of religioni in general, of the church of England in particular, and my reafon for preferring her' communion to all other. I hope they are: all agreeable to the word of God, and that I have taken all pofible care and pains to have them chiefly founded on that, by frequently reading and confulting the facred volumes in their original, and ufing all proper helps, as commentators, paraphrafts, books of controvery, \&cc. in order to come at their true meaning. But above all, my chief dependence hath been upon the guidance and affiftance of God's Holy Spirit, which, for a great number of years, I have never failed daily to implore, as I was truly fenfible, how poor and infignificant all other helps would be without it,towards the bringing us through the valt mazes of controverfy, which reign all over Chriftendom, to the wihhed-for haven and falvation, to which I earneflly pray to God to bring every fincere foul, that longs and ftrives for E 4 it.

## ( $5^{6}$ )

ft. I firmly rely on the fame divine good. nefs to whom I owe fo many mercies; and fo wonderful a change, that if there be yet any thing erroneous or amifs, either in my belief and practice, he will, in his own time, and by his all-fufficient light and grace, enable me to rectify it, that I may have nothing left to do but to acknowledge and adore his infinite and undeferved mercies to me, and particularly for having enabled me to fee fo much of my own weaknefs and infufficiency, unworthinefs and mifery, as to put my whole truit and confidence in his all-powerful grace and unbounded goodnefs, through the infinite merits of our bleffed Redeemer.
Before I conclude this Preface, it will be likewife neceffary for me to give fome account of that vaft quantity of laudanum I have been known'to take for above thefe forty years, and my motives for fo doing, in order to undeceive fuch perfons as may have conceived too favourable an opinion of that dangerous drug, from any thing they may have heard me fay, heard at fecondhand, of may have obferved of the fmall vifiblg

## ( 57 )

vifible hurt I have received from it, during fo long and conftant a ufe of it.
And firt of all, as to the true occafion of my taking it, whatever pretence I may heretofore have made for it, fuch as its eafing the pain of the gout, (which diftemper; though I heretofore pretended to be often troubled with, yet I never was, nor had the leaft fymptom or tendency to in my conflitution) or of its being a great help to ftudy, a reviver of the fpirits, and the like, which qualities it in fome meafure hath; yet my motive for taking it at firf, and continuing it fo long, was no other than my vanity and fenfelefs affectation of fingularity; and as that was then my predominant paffion, fo I indulged it in this and many other fuch extravagant ways, at any hazard, as the following fheets will more fully fhew. Secondly, as to the quantity, though it never came up to that vaft excefs as I did then pretend; yet I own that I frequently took fuch large dofes, by way of oftentation, 'as muft have proved detrimental, if not quite fatal, to any man that had had a lefs ftrong and happy coriftitution than I was bleffed with; and I have been very often

## ( 5.8 )

often furprifed to find that I received fo little prejudice from it. And this it was that emboldened me to take fuch large and dangerous draughts of it , without the leaft neceffity or motive for it, but to be taken notice and talked of; infomuch that I continued it during fuch a number of years, that I was become a perfect flave to, and could not be eafy without it, tho' I had for fome time been fenfible of the ill confequences attending the conftant ufe of it , efpecially as often as I indulged my vanity with a larger dofe than ufual.
Thirdly, As to my vain pretence of having found an effectual way of fripping the opium of all its pernicious qualities, though it was true in part, and I had fallen upon a preparation of it (which was a kind of fafe and ufeful improvement on that which Dr. Joñes gives us in his mystery of opium) by the belp of fome acids, particularly the juice of Seville oranges, which, mixed with fome alcalies, raifed a kind of ferment in the infufion, by which fome of the mof vifcous and narcotic parts were either fcummed off, or made to fubfide; yet fo far was it from being fo inoffenfive and beneficial,

## (59)

cial, as I gave it out, that I had frequent occafion to obferve fome of its ill effects in thofe whom II unadvifedly perfuaded to ufe it in fome proper cafes, as I thought, fo that I was obliged to leave off prefcribing it to others; though, as to myfelf, I was a long while before I found any inconvenience in taking it, even in that large quantity; and I have great reafon fill to think it lefs dangerous by far than either that of Dr, Sydenham's, or any infufion exhibited by the apothecaries and common difpenfaries.
However, when I began to feel the incon:venient effects of it, which was not till a good number of years ufing it, I thought it high time to leffen the ufual dofe (which was then about ten or twelve tea fpoonfuls morning and night, and very often more) as faft as I conveniently could, and in about fix month's time had reduced myfelf to half an ounce per day, ${ }^{\text {and }}$ and fomewhat weaker than the common Sydenham. I ftill continued decreafing ; but fuch was my foolifh vanity, that, to conceal my reduction, I Iadded fome other bitter tincture, efpecially that of hierapicra, or fome other fuch corrective,

## - ( 60 )

amiong it, to appeat as fill taking my ufual quantity.
On the other hand, I found that this reduction, gradual as it was, could not be continued without fome affecting and difcouraging inconveniences; fuch as a great laffitude and uneafinefs of the mind, an indolence and incapacity for ftudy, a diflike to every thing I read or wrote, to folitude and application; all which made me apprehenfive, that if Idid not flacken it, and go more warily on with it, I might bring myfelf into a greater evil than that which I endeavoured to thun, and fling myfelf at length into a kind of habitual torpor and inactivity; which might prove at leaft as detrimental to me : to prevent which, I was forced to take a new method, and to inlarge or leffen my dofe, according to the ftate of health I was in, Cometimes according as the weather was more or lefs enlivening; or according as the courfe of my ftudies required a greater or leffer degree of application. All this, however, was rather owing to my own natural indolence and want of refolution to go on in fpight of all thofe inconveniences, than to any danger there really was. in the $\mathrm{cafe}_{2}$

## (65)

cafe, as I happily found reafon afterward's to think j . for when the Divine Providence was pleafed to blefs me, with a contrary turn of mind, and to make me deteft and ablor all my former follies, and this among the reff, to fuch a degree, as to refolve; by his afiitance, upon a thorough change, I then found both the tark, and all the inconveniences attending it, to grow more and more eary; and as this refolution was founded upona much better principle than my former ones were, fo it was attended with fucch a blefling at my laft ftay at Oxford, aniofrom July to the latter end of September, by which time I had made a conifiderable progrefs in my reduction, that I had quite completed the conqueft, and lived fome weeks there without taking one drop, or even wihing for it, although neither then porfince was I without fome employment which required a pretty clofe application:In this pleafing ftate, as. I jufly thought it, I continued tor fome months, when the feverity of the enfuing winter overturned all my meafures, and forced me, though much againft my will, to have recourfe to it - again:" neither could I think of any fafer or more

## ( 62 )

more effectual remedy againft that chilnefs of my blood, and lownefs of firits, which $I$ laboured under through the exceffive coldnefs of the feafon. I refolved, however, to refume it in the fmalleft quantity that I could find would anfwer my end; that is, what was, as near as I could judge, equivafent to ten or twelve drops of Sydenham's, and with full intention to leave it off as foon as the warm weather returned, and had accordingly reduced myfelf to about half that quantity; though not without fome difficulty, on account of a work I was fill engaged in, and the neceffity we were under to keeptime with the printers and publihers. Finding it at length fo neceffary and pleafant, as well as fafe and harmlefs, I refolved to continue it, and have done fo to this preferre time; that is, for feven or eight years, without the leaft inconvenience- from it:On the contrary, I have reafon to think that even that fmall quantity, though fcarce equivalent to twelve drops of Sydenham's, hath. been of fome fervice to meto prevent that decay of firits which old age, (being now drawing near my feventiethi) a fedentary life, and clofe ftudy, might otherwife proba-

## ( 63 .)

bly have brought upon me: and it is to this fmall dofe, which I take every night in a pint of very fmall punch, as foon as I leave off writing, that I attribute, next to the bleffing of God, that good chare of health I have hitherto enjoyed, and my having been able, for fo many years, to go through the fatigues and applications of ftudy, from feven in the morning to feven at night, preferving ftill a good appetite and digeftion, a clear head, and tolerable flow of fpirits, and enjoying a found fleep of fix or feven hours, without indulging myfelf in any other li quors than tea all the day, and the abovementioned quantity of punch, or fomething equivalent to it at night; and as I have not opportunity for much exercife, I take care to live on the plaineft diet at noon, and to obferve the old adage at night,

Ut fis nocze levis, fit tibi cuna brevis. Tonleepeafy at night, let your fupper be light:

## $M \quad \mathrm{E} \quad \mathrm{M} \quad \mathbf{O}$ I $\dot{\mathrm{R}} \quad \mathrm{S}$,

$$
0 \mathrm{~F}
$$

## GEORGE PSALMANAZAR:

I cannot better begin this melancholy account of my former life, vile and abominable as it hath been, and blended with fuch mixture of the moft unaccountable pride, folly, and ftupid villainy, in oppofition to reafon, religion, and all checks of confcience, till almoft' to the thirtieth year of my age, than by humbly acknowledging the infinite mercy of God, not only in preferving me fo long from the many, evils and difafters which my own wicked rafhnefs muft elfe unavoidably have precipitated me into, as the fequel will fufficiently fhowis; but much more fo in that gradual and vifible change which his grace wrbught in me, by enabling me frequently to wetrofpect with. Chame and remorfe on a life fo bafely fpent, to fend up the moft fervent wifhes to heaven that I might at length break off from fo fhameful and wicked a courfe of the vileft and moft fcandalous F . im-
infpofture, that a wild and abandoned youth could be guilty of, and, that I might but be bleffed with fuch a fteady refolution as at once publickly to difclaim all the lies and forgeries I had formerly publifhed in that monftrous romance, and at any rate or risk to take the fhame to my felf, and make a free confeffion of the whole impofure. But I had not only my pride to combat, but the difpleafure which fuch a declaration would give to all my friends; who being very boneft and religious, could not but have taken it much at heart, and, perhaps, been expofed to the cenfure of the world for their charitable opinion of me; to fay nothing of the abhorrence they muft have conceived againft fo deteftable a cheat. As thefe therefore wefe fuch powerful determents to a man wholly deftitute of any laudable way of living, I could not expect that my earneft wihes would be fpeedily anfwered; and my only hope was, that the fame gracious God, who had thus effectually a waked me ro a fenfe of my guilt and danger, would alfo in his own time hear thofe prayers which himfelf had infpired me to make,

## ( 67 )

efpecially, as upon a retrofpection of my paft follies, I was apt to comfort myfelf with the thoughts, that the violence of my favourite paffion, pride, could never have hurried me fo irrefiftibly through fuch fcenes of folly and danger, if there had not been fome fad flaw in my undertanding, fome unavoidable degree of madnefs in my temper, which might in fome meafure extenuate,: if not wholly excufe, the atrocious guilt it had involved me in; and the hope that it might fill be placed to that acccount, by a merciful Judge of all our thoughts and intents, of our frail and corrupt nature, joined to the ftedfaft confidence I had in the promifes of the Gofpel, and in the infinite, merits of a divine Saviour, preferved me from defpairing of mercy and pardon, of fuccefs and bleffing on thofe happy beginnings, if clofely and earneftly purfued.
But as fuch a hope, withoit a fincere defire of doing one's part, to the beft of one's power, and according to the degree of affiffance given from above, would rather deferve the name of rafh and hameful F 2

## ( 68 )

fumption; fo the next ftep I took, at leaft in view, was to fet about making all poffible reparation to God and his church, and to the world, and my own confcience, for the fcandal which fuch a vile piece of hypocrify muft have given to all, efpecially to good men, and in fpite of all reluctance from pride and felf-love, which the greater it was, would the more naturally lead one to the throne of mercy for a proportionable fupply of Divine grace, and patiently to 'wait for it in God's own proper time. I had not continued many months in this hopeful difpofition, before I perceived all thofe dificulties and difcouragements to vanih by degres, but more efpecially at the approach of a fevere difeafe, though lingering, and the apprehepfions of death, which laft, as it did not appear to be fo near at hand, gave me room to hope I might have time fufficient granted me in mercy, to go through this faithful narrative, and undeceive the world; fo that if the Divine Providence did think fit to drive me to the writing of it by his afflicting hand, I hope it will rather add weight to the cre-, dit

## ( 69 )

dit of it, feeing no time is fitter than this to infpire a man with the deepeft ferioufnefs and fincerity. But as to me, I ftill more rely on the affiftance of that fpirit of truth, to whofe fpecial grace I am bound to afcribe the abhorting fenfe I had already conceived againt my former guilt, as well as the earneft defire and refolution of tranfmitting to the world fuch an account of my paft guilty life, as might wholly contradict and explode that falle and impious one, which I had been induced to publifh in the days of my abominable folly and vanity. Under that Divine Guide therefore I fet myfelf immediately about it, and carried on daily, and with as much application as my difeafe (a very violent ague and fever) would permit, not doubting but the fincerity which lrefolved; by God's afliftance, fhould reign through the whole, would make fome amends for the lownefs of ftile, and other imperfections, which, confidering my weakly condition both of mind and body, were in fome meafure unavoidable. Thus far I thought neceffary to apprife the reader concerning the (happy, I hope I have reafon to call

## ( 70 )

it) occafion of my writing the following account, which in the name, and under the direction of that fame God of truth, I now hope to live to fee finifhed, in order to be printed, if thought worthy of it, after my death; and I fhall ohly add, that I ami at this prefent time of writing (April 22, 1728) at a friend's houfe in the country, free from all ftudy and bufinefs, or any other impediment, but what is caufed by my diftemper, and fhall dedicate all the time I have to fpare in the writing of it. But here I hope I hall be excufed from giving an account either of my real country or family, or any thing that might caft a reflection upon either, it, being but too common, though unjuft, to cenfure them for the crimes of private perfons, for which reafon' I think myfelf obliged, out of refpect to them, to conceal both. Out of Europe I was not born, nor educated, nor ever travelled; but continued in fome of the fouthern parts of it till about the fixteenth year of my age, when neceffity obliged me in fome meafure to remove into more northern ones, though never farther fiorthward than the Rhine in Germany,
or Yorkhire in England. And this I pur: pofely mention, becaufe I have been heretofore fufjected to be a German, Swede or Dane by fome; by others, an Englifh or Scotchman, as their fancy lead them, though I never faw Germany till I was fixteen, nor England till abaut two or three years after. As for my parents and relations they were Roman Catholics, and moft of them very zealous in their way, and ftrongly biafled againft all Protefants. My father was of an ancient, but decayed family, and had been obliged to leave my mother before I was five gears old, and to live near five hundred miles from her, whilf the was left to live and breed me up upon her fmall fortune, without. receiving any affiftance from him, his miffortunes having put it quite out of his power to contribute any thing; fo that $\Gamma$ was wholly left to her care. However, neither that, nor the narrownefs of her circumftances, hindered her from giving me the beft education fhe could, being then her only furviving child. .She was a pious good woman in her way, and though I was nio fmall favourite of hers, was yet F 4 kepई
kept with due ftrictnefs whilft I ftaid with her, which was however but a fhort time, and do not remember that I had then any the leaft vicious inclination, nor in all likelihood might have had, had I ftill continued under her wing; whereas through the mifmanagement of thofe firft perfons to whofe tuition I was next committed, fuch a wrong foundation was laid, and fo ftrong a biafs given me to vanity and felf-conceit, as proved the unhappy fource of all my fad mifcarriages fince.
One general remark here I cannot avoid making concerning the fchools of the Roman Catholics, viz, that all their ftudents muft learn to read, and even pray, in Latin, before they are capable of underftanding one word of it; for this doth but inure them to read and pray without any attention, even when they are afterwards capable of undertanding what they read and pray for. This ill-timed method had been complained of by many a one who have fince felt the fad effects of it, as well as the almoft infurmountable difficulty of maftering-a defect fo early contrafted and fo deeply rooted, as it.were, in our nature,

## ( 73 )

and none hath had more reafon to bewail it than I.
But what did me in particular the moft hurt, in my education abroad, was the great admiration which my more than common readinefs at learning whatever came in my way had gained me, and the imprudent fondnefs and partiality which my mafters fhewed to me on that account. I was hardly turned of fix years when I was fent to a free-fchool taught by two Francifcan monks, the eldeft of whom perceiving my uncommon genius for languages, for till then I had only learned to read all forts of print and writings, and was befides very carelefs about writing a tolerable hand, took it into his head to put me to * the Latin form, though my mother and all my friends thought me much too young for it; efpecially as I was to be ranked and claffed among other boys of twice my years, and who had already been at it a year or two, and fome more; however he depended fo much on his judgment, about my. genius and application, that he doubted not, he faid, but to fee me out; top all the reft in lefs than a year or two.

He

He was not miftaken, and though it put me to great difficulties and hard ftudy toreach them, I began to feel fuch emotions of vanity at the quick progrefs I made, and the commendations he gave me upon it, that I refted not fatisfied till I had gained the firit rank in the form, as well as in his affection, for as he spared neither careffes nor encouragement to me, I foon became fenfible both by his behaviour, as well as by the deference which the other boys paid to me, how much I was got in his favour.
Our fchool was often vifited by priefts, monks, gentlemen, and other perfons that paffes through our city, and though. we had in it feveral boys whofe parents were in a much higher ftation, yet I was always fingled out as the flower of the flock, and as the moft ready to anfwer fuch queftions as were fuitable to our form. Our monk had likewife, by way of animating us, caufed fome curious nicknacks to be made by the nuns of a neighbouring monaftery, which they were to wear hanging to their button-holes, by a fine ribon, who held the firf feats. Thefe were of feveral fizes,

## ( 75 )

fizes, and one of them much larger than the reft was for the foremoft in rank. We were to be entitled to thefe according to our merit, and this laft fell to my lot from the firft exercife, and fo proud was I become of this bauble, that I never loft it for one fingle day; for I had fuch a ready and retentive memory, and quick apprehenfion, as by the help of a moderate application, made it impoffible for my fchool-fellows to wreft it from me. This mark of diftinction did moreover entitle me to be head monitor and marfhal of that whole fchool. All which filled me with fuch vanity and ambition to excel, that I could not brook any fuperiority or preference, and our monk was but too fond of indulging, and even encouraging me in' it , though to my no fmall deffiment, as he might eafily perceive that it had given me fuch a frong bias to pride, as a prudent man would have rather chofen to nip in the bud, efpecially as he eafily perceived that it created no fmall envy in my fchool-fellows, and a kind of diffatisfaction in fome of their parents and relations.

He tried once indeed to thwart his partiality to me, by giving our form a new kind of exercife, the price of which to the beft performer was to be a fine piece of nun's work, which he adjudged to another, whom all the fchool knew to be a dunce, but in point of quality the head of us all. Had he given it to fome others of our form, who were greater proficients in learning, I might have thought they had fucceeded better in their performance than I at that time; and though it would have been a great mortification to me, it might have only made me double my diligence; but here the preference was fo flagrant and vifible, that I could not forbear expreffing a defire to know wherein he had outdone me, and a fufpicion that he had been affiited underhand by fome monk or fomebody elfe. When the good father found that I took the matter fo to heart, and, in fome meafure, threaten to bid adieu, if. not to the Latin, at leaft to his fchool; (and I believe I hould really have done it, fo highly I refented what I called the injuftice done me) he thought fit to pacify me ty affuring me, that my competitor had,

## ( 77 )

had, upon this occafion, fo far excelled himfelf, that he could not forbear affigning him the prize by way of encouragement, though my performance was far enough from being inferior to his;' and fo, to put an end to the contention, immediately fent for another piece of the fame curious work, and gave it to me, not without fome great encomium on my uncommon diligence and progrefs, and other tokens of his fingular regard, which fent me home fo fatisfied and full of myfelf, that, alas for me! every thing feemed to contribute to fwell my growing pride, and make me forget myfelf.
Many other fuch inftances of his partial fondnefs' I could name, which all tended to make me ftill more affuming and arrogant; one however I cannot pafs by, which fhall ferve as a feecimen: as I never was guilty of a fault at fchool, fo let me do what I would out of it, I was never punifhed for it, as the other boys were, but had, perbaps, a foft reprimand or fome eafy tafk affigned me by way of penance, for I cannot call to mind that I ever had a blow or crofs word from him. One day
in particular, fome ftrangers, who vifited us after dinner, obtained us a difcharge for the reft of the day. We were no fooner got out but I told my fchool-fellows, that we ought to go and procure the famereleafe to the girls' of another fchool. According!y we went and broke into the houfe, and drove the miftrefs and fcholars out, and then locked the doors, that they might not be obliged to come in again, and fent her the key at night. On the next day a fevere complaint was brought againft us for the affault, and I charged as the ringleader of the reft, upon which a fuitable punifhment was promifed, and foon after put in execution, in which I not only expected to have a fhare, but to be the firft called down to it, and yet by what partial motive I know not, I had no other punifhment than a feeming fevere reprimand, and fome eafy task, whilft all the reft were forced to fubmit to the difcipline of the fchool. This partiality they loudly complained of, not only to him, but to their friends; but their refentment upon it only gave me new matter for triumph, as it did to them new caufe for envy, which
which yet they'dared not vent in any other way than words.
Thus I went on learning of Latin apace; I could tranflate out of it, write and fpeak it with great readinefs, as far as I had been taught, which was thought furprifing, confidering I had hardly attained my ninth year, and been but two years under his care. The misfortune was, that he made us only converfant with common fchoolbooks, and but with few of any of the old claffics either in profe or verfe, fo that I was quite unacquainted with their ftile tilt I came into better hands, as I foon after did; for our good father being fhortly after chofen head, or, as they ftile it, guardian of another convent, about twentyfour miles from this, and in an archiepifcopal city, where was alfo a college of Jefuits for the education of youth, he eafily prevailed upon my mother to let me go with him thither, and to board at the monaftery under his eye, whilft I went on with my fudies at the college, where he alfo promifed to recommend me to the care of thofe fathers. He likewife promifed her that he would, in the evening, make

## ( 80 )

me repeat and explain what I had learned in the day, and by thát means pufh me fo forward in my learning that I fhould out-top all my age, all which proved fuch powerful perfuafives to my mother, that the eafily agreed to it, efpecially as he took four or five more youths with him to be on the fame foot with me both at the college and in the convent. We fet out accordingly with him for the place, and when I was introdaced into the Jefuits college, there was no fmall frife what clafs I fhould be admitted into at firf. Here it will be neceffary to acquaint the reader that the Jefuits diftinguifh their forms, or, $`$ as they more properly file them, claffes, each of them being kept in a feparate apartment, as follows, viz.
I. 'The vith, or loweft, where they begin to learn the Latin Grammar.
2. vth, where they perfect themfelves in that, and begin to learn fome Latin books, and to make fome wretched Latin. 3. ivth, where they read Tacitus, Cicero's Epiftes, Ovid, and fome other eafy Roman

## ( 81 )

man authors, and begin to make better Latin.
4. iiid, where they read Curtius, Cicero's fpeeches, Virgil, and make pretty good. Latin, and learn to make Latin verfes. They likewife begin here to learn the Greek Grammar.
5. Humanity. In this clafs they read Horace, Cicero, Terence, make good verfes, and compofe fome fet fpeeches on a fubject given, and if they have a genius for it, make fome confiderable progrefs in the Greek tongue, though they only read homilies of the fathers, and make verfions out of Latin into Greek. They likewife make fome fet fpeeches, or poetical works; before a full audience.
6. Rhetoric. Here Homer and other Greek poets, Demofthenes and other Greek authors, are read; together with Cicero de Oratore, Horace's Satyres, and de Arte poetica. Themes are compofed on given fubjects, as much as can be, in the Ciceronian ftile and method; and likewife poems in imitation of the Greek and Latin poets, and other books, compiled by fome of the fociety for the ufe of this clafs, as

## (. 82 )

there are others for every clafs elfe, and every branch of learning that is taught in them, the greateft part of which is to be learned by heart by the fcholars, as well as feveral other perfons, out of the claffic authors, in order to exercife their memory, as is pretended, but rather ferves to clog it with a deal of unintelligible ftuff, which being fooner forgot than learned, ferves to little purpofe, except it be to take up fo much of their time, to the neglect of more :ufeful things, and more adapted to their capacities; to which I may fafely add another great inconveniency, viz. that thefe leffons being to be repeated to the decurions or monitors, before the regent comes in, and an account to be given to him who hath, or who hath not learned them duely, in order to be commended or reproved, both the fcholar and the monitor are in fuch hafte to go through the drudgery, that thofe are mont approved of who can repeat theirs with the greateft fpeed, or rather with precipitation, by which fuch an habit is formed of fpeaking and reading with fuch monfious, quicknefs, as will require a great deal

## ( 83 )

deal of trouble and pains;: to break:one's felf off afterwards, if iever ittlis really rectified, and this $I$ :found long fince to my lofs, and no fraill grief.
7. The laft is philofophy, which they divide into logic, 'phyfics, metaphyfics, and morality, each of which takes ;them a quarter of a year in learning, or,, , at leaft, in expounding. Every fcholar is obliged to fpend a year, at leaft in each of the claffes; and if, at the year's: end, when they are all to.be feparately examined, any be found tardy, either through dulnefs or negligence, cthey are condemned to go through the fame fludies another year, whilft the' reft, who are found worthy, are promoted to the nextciclafs in rank....

When I came therefore to be acquainted with the particular fudies and books of each clais, and came to reflect on my:being fuch a ftranger to the claffics, I begged of my old mafter that . I might be offered .only as candidate for the third clafs, wheré they began to be taught; rand this I thould have looked upon as afavour, confidering that it was then Midfuimmer, and that I

## ( $: 84$ )

was herded as a beginner into a clafs where the reft had ialready fudied fix months; fo: that I thought I Chould have ftill enough to do to overtake. them before the year -was out.- But the good father would by tno means agree to it, but infifted upon my :being examined as a candidate to huma:nity. ${ }^{-}$This, I complained, was putting a adouble hardfhip upon me, being an utter :ftranger to the every authorthat was read in this as well as in the other below it, and having, at moft; but feven months to mafter them all; he fo far engaged; though againft my will, formy overcoming all thofe difficalties by $\ddot{m} y$ genius and application, that I was obliged to undergo the examination of : a candidate for humanity : and though my repugnance made me lefs folicitous how Ilwent through it, as iI was fo defirous to be fent down to the clafs below it; yet:whether the old monk's intereft prevailed, or my own merit gained it; I was readily admitted into the clafs of humanity, and found it a vety:hard tug té. beep up my credit under thofe difadratages I laboured under. I wondered isdeed how my old mafter could be guilty

## '( 85 )

of fuch a neglect, and often preffed him to give me his affiftance, which he trying to comply with, gave me but too fair an: opportunity of difcovering the true caufe. of it, viz. his being as unacquainted with them as I was. This therefore proved: a very difficult clafs to me; and what was ftill more difcouraging to me was, that our regent, fo they call the perfon that teaches in every clafs, inftead of making any kind allowance for $m y$ tender years, for my being entered fo late, and under: fuch difadvantages, often charged me with neglect and indolence, and, in a jocöre manner, threatened to leave me interimanentes, that is, inftead of raifing to the next clafs, to leave me in this for another year. And though I was fenfible that would have been more for my advantage, yet the fhame of it was what I could not have brooked; and I thought it a mortification more than fufficient to be ranked among the middlemoft of his clafs, who had till then been 1. ufed to be at the head. But this he did rather to fpur me on than to difpirit me, that I might the more eafily be admitted into the clafs of rhetoric againf the time-

[^0]of the yearly examipation. T'his grand ceremony is performed a little before the Chriftmas holidays, and when the fcholars have learned their doom, that is, whether to go up or to flay in the old clafs, they break up for ten or twelve days, and go to their refpective homes. There were at this time four or five of my own townfboys, all of them not only much older, but who had been at the college feveral years before me, and bore a kind of envy againft me for being admitted at once into the fame clafs with them, and would have been glad to have left me behind in it. This confideration, joined to the difpleafure: fuch a piece of news would have been, not only to my old mafter, but much more fo to my mother, made me fo muich the more diligent againft the time of trial, and the more eafily forego the advantage of another year's humanity : forthe pride and pleafure of keeping pace with; and following them into rhetoric. Accordingly, I exerted myfelf fo well, and gave fuch fatisfaction at my examination, that I was nominated; as well as they, for that higher clafs. But tho' this
gave me no fmall joy, and made me go home with a lighter heart, yet I have had fince fufficient reafon to wihh it had proved otherwife; for our next regent, (the Jefuits cuftoms is to change them every year, and to fend new ones out of other colleges) proved a perfon every way almoft unqualified for that high clafs, fo that we rather went backwards than forward under him. He effayed at firft to expound fome of the Greek poets and orators by the help of the Latin verfions annexed to them, in doing. which he fo far betrayed his ignorance of that tongue, that every one of us foon became fenfible of it, which obliged him to fet it quite afide. He was not much happier in the Latin ones, though better acquainted. with them, and took at length fuch a difguft to the college method, that he may jufly be faid to have diverted himfelf with teaching us things quite oppofite to it, and altogether foreign to our clafs, but which fuited his genius better. It will not be amifs to obferve here, that the three main qualifications that procure admiffion into that fociety, are quality, or high rank, learning and riches. Our good G 4 regent

## ( 88 )

regent was one of the laft fort, being the fon of an overgrown citizen or tradefman, who brought money enough into the fraternity to make amends for his want of learning; and as this college was but an obfcure one, in comparifon to thofe which they have in their great univerfities, he might be thought perhaps good enough to teach here; at leaft, if he was not fit to do fo here, he could be much lefs fo any where elfe. He complied however fo far with the rules of the college, and of our clafs, as to oblige us now and then to make verfes, themes, verfions, and fuch low exercifes; but I foon found that he did not give himfelf the trouble of looking them over, or even, for form's fake, of commending or difcommending our performances according to their merit. As he was of a facetious temper, he would often fo far indulge his vein, as to entertain us for a whole hour with ftories, which were neither calculated to improve our minds, nor to make us in love with our books. At length, quite tired, as he feemed, with the drudgery of the college, he took it into his head to teach us heraldry, geography, and fortification ${ }_{3}$

## ( 89 )

fortification, inftead of the proper leffons of our clafs; fo that we were forced, in fome meafure, to exchange books for maps, coats of arms, plans of cities; cafles, \&cc. and, at length, to dabble with him in clay and dirt, in order to make a variety of fortifications, with all their appurtenances and proper colours; and thefe he took no fmall pride in fhewing to ftrangers, but with this falvo, that this was our and his employment only between the fchool hours, tho' we were but too fenfible that they took up likewife all our fchool-time, fo that fome days we did nothing elfe but that, to the neglect of every other branch of learning that was proper for our clafs. At length, after having trifled away near two thirds of the year, to our no fmall detriment, and to my great. regret, who was fo far behind-hand in my my learning, I was timely relieved, as I thought, by a letter from my mother, informing me, that the rector of a fmall convent of Dominicans in our neighbourhood, was going to teach philofophy to as many young gentlemen as he could get, and inviting me to make one of the number,

I readily agreed to it, the convent being but a pleafant walk out of my native city; and though I found I muft take my leave of the claffics if I went, yet I thought the learning of philofophy would be both more creditable and ufeful, than the poor ftuff which our Jefuit taught us; though had I been then as well acquainted with the fubtleties of Tho. Aquinas (or rather Ariftotle, for that is the philofophy which the Dominicans teach) as I became afterwards, I doubt whether I fhould ever have been one of his difciples, at leaft by my confent. However, I left the college without any further ceremony, and having acquainted four or five of our clafs that were my townfboys with my defign, they foon followed me, and at our coming to the rector, we found that he had already about twenty more, fome, from a great univerfity about fixty miles off, others, from the neighbouring towns, feveral of them mere dunces and ruftics, with no other education than a little fmattering of the Latin tongue, and not above five or fix tolerably qualified for the fludy we were engaging in. As for me, whatever my old Francifcan

## ( gi )

Francifcan mafter might depend upon as to the ftrength of my genius and clofenefs of application, for acquiring thefe branches of learning I was ftill wanting in, yet the difcouragements which I had already encountered through his mifmanagement, in placing me in too high a form, as well as the time we had trifled away in the clafs of rhetoric, had much abated my thirft after learning; and the much greater difappointment I met with under this new pretended teacher of philofophy, quite compleated my misfortune, by turning it into a downright careleffiefs and indifference about it. For tho' I was naturally quick enough, and affiduous at whatever I could gain the maftery of, and applaufe for fo doing, yet, whenever the cafe proved otherwife, no youth could be more naturally lazy and fupine than I; fo that I cannot but think, on the fricteff recollection I can make, that thefe many difcouragements fo clofely following one another, were rather the caufe of that deplorable indolence I fince contracted for all laudable application to fudy, than my own natural temper and genius, which, had it been rightly
directed

## ( 92 )

directed and encouraged by proper motives, and efpecially if kept under fome frict difcipline, might have eafily been enabled to have overcome the greateft difficulties in almoft every branch of learning: but to return to our Dominican rector.
He began as ufual with logic, and difplayed a pretty good talent at explaining it to as many of us as had a genius for it; for as to the reft, which were near two-thirds of his fchool, both he and we could eafily perceive that he was only wronging them of their time and money, though little did I think how foon that was to be my cafe: for though I took his logic with fuch furprifing quicknefs and delight, as to have but one competitor, and was become a, great favourite of his, by the free and humorous way in which I ufed to put, now and then, fome puzzling queftions to him; yet when we came to the fecond branch, which was Ariftotle's phyfics, with Aquinas's comments, I found it fuch an unintelligible jargon, and him fo little qualified to explain it to us, that I became quite tired with it ; for fome of us, efpecially my competitor and I, expected at leaft that he

## 93 )

would have made every point as clear and evident to us, as he had before in logical lectures, and have anfwered fuch objections as we were able to raife againt elther the doctrines, or his expofitions; but, to our great furprize, we found that he had undertaken to expound what himfelf did not underftand, and that Aquinas's fubtilities and diftinctions were as much above his reach as above ours. Thus, for inftance, Ariftotle's account of the materia prima, together with his fubtile commentator's expofitions on it, in which our rector fpent above a fortnight, including the rubs we threw into his way, appeared to us fuch an unintelligible heap of ftuff; that, at our taking leave of it, to pals to another point, we made ourfelves very merry about it, and owned ourfelves as much in the dark as when he began it; infomuch, that he was forced to own he never could thoroughly comprehend it , and only delivered it to us on the authority of that philofopher, and of his many eminent difciples of the Dominican order, fuch as Albertus Magnus, Aquinas, \&ic. \&c. I have fincé, upon running over his leffons

## ( 94 )

more carefully, found reafon to doubt whether a much abler head than his, would not have been as much at a lofs to have beat it into any man's brain, that would not be fatisfied with words without a meaning. However, as I plainly perceived that his chief view was to get our money, without troubling himfelf whether our progrefs was anfwerable, I contracted by degrees fuch a habit of indolence and liftleffnefs to all he faid (efpecially as he had got a fingular knack at extricating himfelf, when clofely preffed, by fome facetious joke or merry ftory) that I wrote his lectures, and heard his expofitions, without any attention, or offering any objection, unlefs it was in the jocund way, and to enliven our drooping fpirits, and without troubling my melf whether what he faid or anfwered was right or wrong.
I know not whether it was not owing to. his perceiving this liftleffnefs in us, that he began to raife our expectation and hopes that his metaphyfics, which was foon to follow, would prove more delightful to us. We did indeed expect it, from the nature of the fubjects it treats of, and were not a little impa-

## ( 95 )

impatient to have this quarter finifhed, that we might enter into a more entertaining field : but when we found ourfelves no lefs difappointed in this, it only damped our firits the more, and gave me a ftill greater dillike to the jargon of the fchool, fo that by that time we entered into the laft quarter, when ethics were to be the new fubject of his lectures, and might have otherwife proved more ufeful and entertaining to us, if it had been handled by a more proper perfon, we were grown fo tired and out of conceit with him, that we reaped no more benefit from it than we had from the reft ; and inftead of diverting ourfelves with repetitions and difputes about his leffons, as we ufed to do at firf, we ftudied to forget every fubject he had difcuffed to us; as foon as we were got out of his fight. Thus having murdered, as I may fay, another year, we were difmiffed, not without great applaufe and compliments to fome of us, on account of our parts and proficiency. But. if. I may judge of the reft by myfelf, to whom he was always pleafed to allow the firt rank, I am fure his praifes were ill beftowed as

## ( 96 )

to any benefit we had reaped from his pains and ours: however, I was by that time become fo great a favourite to him, that he afterwards left no means nor careffes untried to induce me to enter into their order, and I believe, in the mind I then was in, he might eafily have prevailed, had not my mother ftrenuoully oppofed it. I was fenfible of my deficiency in all the branches of learning 1 . had hitherto gone through, by the mifconduct. of thofe under whom I had learned, and could eafily fee what dunces both my old Francifcan mafter and this Dominican rector were, though they paffed for able men; and where could I better conceal my own defects and ignorance than under a monkifh habit, which would, at leaft, give one the reputation of learning? But this I had taken care to conceal from her, partly out of pride, and partly to prevent her taking it to heart, and our rector had addrefs enough to make her believe I was a prodigy, confidering how young I fill was, and to perfuade her to fend me to the next univerfity, and to learn theology there, promifing to give me fuch a recommendation

## ('97)

mendation to the Dominicans who taught it there, as well as the Jefuits, that no pains hould be fpared to make me hine in the world. She eafily confented to it; and he gave me a certificate directed to the prior of their convent at that great city, teftifying that I had gone thro' a courfe of philofophy, and was fit to be admitted a fudent in theology, to which he tacked fome farther commendations; all which could be of no fervice to me, unlefs I rèfolved to go and learn under the Dominicans, for the Jefuits would hardly have admitted me to that clafs, before I had gone a new courfe through their philorophy. It had been, indeed, much better for me to have chofen the latter, confidering the little proficiency I had made in it. ${ }^{\prime}$ ' but my pride, and the fear of difobliging my mother, determined me to the former, and I offered myfelf accordingly, and was readily admitted a fudent under two very reverend rectors, the one for the - morning, and the other for the afternoon; both very graye and learned, indeed, in their way; but, upon my firft admittance, the fchool appeared to me like a new world,

## ( 98 )

where I was looked upon as a little ratw frippling, too young quite, in all appearance, to herd among the reft of the ftudents, fome of whom were twice my age, and none by many years fo young as I. What was Aill more difcouraging was, that here was no diftinction made between thole who had already ftudied near two years (for the whole courfe of theology lafts two whole years) and thofe who were but nedyly admitted. The fame lectures were read and expounded to all alike, and in the ufual courfe, fo that thofe who came not at the very beginning, had no other chance, but at the end, to put middle and both ends together as well as they could, which made the old ftanders affume fuch an overbearing air over the new ones, as was altogether mortifying, at leaft it proved fo to me,' who never had, till then; feen my fchoolfellows fo much above me.
I may fairly date the completion of my ruin from the time of my coming to this populous place, on more accounts than one: for firf, the city was a noble, great one, full of gentry and nobility, of coaches, and all kinds of grandeur, all which did greatly affect

## ( 99 )

affect me, who had never feen fo much by far of the beau monde, neither in my native city, nor in the archiepifcopal one, where I had ftudied under the Jefuits. 2dly, I had been already cloyed with Aquinas's philofophy, when I had no fuch bright tempting objects dancing before my eyes, what likelihood could there be that fuch a fchool as this, fhould reconcile me to the more refined and unintelligible fubtilities of his theology, efpecially comfideing the difadvantages we late comers were forced to labour under, and the high fate which our two rectors took'. upon them? for here was no room for objecting, or even defiring a point or a term to be explained, and we had nothing to do but to write what they dictated, 'and take their expofitions for found doctrine. Even thofe who had ftudied longeft under them, and were looked upon as the brighteft, were not indulged to ftart a difficulty, though the occafion was ever fo fair; all which damped - , my fpirits, who had never been ufed to fuch a reftraint, aṇd had, moreover, the mortification to fee mylelf placed in the lowent rank, who had, till then, been H2

## ( 100 )

mofly at the head, that I grew by degrees quite out of conceit both with myfelf and with the fchool. What added fill more to my difcontentednefs was, that I boarded at fome near relations in one of the fuburbs of the city, and at a great diftance from the convent, and the fe commonly dined fo late, that I muft either take up with an irregular meal, or come near an hour after the reft to the fchool. I did indeed prefer 'the firft for fome time, but grew by degrees weary of it, as the ftudy' I was upon grew lefs engaging to me; fo that though I took up as little time as I could at my dinner, yet one half hour, at leaft, was loft by it, and our rector had dictated fome pages of matter to the reft, which, after fchool was over, I ufed to copy out of the manufcripts of fome of my fchoolfellows. Our rector having more than once obferved what irregular hours I kept, was fo kind as to give me a civil reprimand, and not expecting, perhaps, a reply to it, was going on with his lecture, but I had been folittle ufed to make anfwers to it in dumb how, as I obferved many of his hearers were forced to do, that I'
bluntly
bluntly told him the occafion, affuring him, that I had not influence enough in the family to prevail on them to alter their hours.
The good father not approving of my excure, which plainly fhewed that I could not forego my dinner for his leffons, and might be an ill precedent to fome of the reft, feemed rather inclined to lay the fault on my being better pleafed with thofe late hours of dising, or elfe he thought I might eafily perfuade my relations to alter their method on my account. But whether, fo or not, he infifted, and reafonably enough, that I fhould conform to the fchool-hours, whatever inconveniency it might put me as to my dinner, I was fenfible of the juftnefs of his reproof, and after having been often at high words with my relations (for they were fully paid for my board) to no purpofe, and tried to conform to the fchool-hours for fome time; I grew weary of it, and having nobody to controul me, which proved my greateft misfortune, I quite forfook the afternoon lectures, and fpent that time in fauntring about the city and country adjacent, viewing the build-


## ( 102 )

ings, and fometimes taking plans and viftoes, of fuch places as pleafed me, but without any other defign than to divert myfelf: I was, however, furprifed foon after, to find myfelf interrogated by our morning profeffor, about the reafon of my not coming to the afternoon lectures. Whether my quondam mafter of philofophy had wrote any thing particularly concerning his expectation of getting me into their order or not, I knew not, but I was in a genteel manner given to underftand by this, that I ought to look on it as a fingular favour that they fo far concerned themfelves about me. What anfwer I made him, befides my thanking him for his care, I cannot recollect ; but though we parted good friends, I foon after forfook his lecture alfo, and from that time minded little elfe but my own pleafures, which, though altogether of the innocent kind, fometimes with the fair fex, at other times in viewing the curiofities of the place, or making folitary excurfions, and the like; yet wẹre not without fome pungent remorfe, as they tended to little elfe but to inure me to a habit of 'indolence and carelefs

## ( IO 3 )

inactivity. At fome intervals, indeed, I tried to read over all my manufcripts both in philofophy and theology, but ftill fo difgufted with them, that I never had the patience to go through them.
I had before this fent fome complaining letters to my mother, as well as meffages by word of mouth by fome of my townfmen, who had been witneffes of the bad hours we kept, and to whom I had related the inconveniency it had put to, with relation to my ftudies; and fhe, good woman, thinking that I took it more to heart than I did, fent me a fmall fupply to convey me to Avignon, where I was to meet an old rich counfellor of our town, who was gone to fpend fome time in that famed city. He had no children of his own, but fome nephews, one of which he defigaed to breed up a fcholar under me, in confideration of which I was to lodge and board with the uncle, till I could better provide for myfelf. As this was likely to be a kind of change for the better for me, as well as an eafement to my mother, whofe ftrait circumftances could hardly' permit her to be at fuch expence for my education, I

## ( 104 )

made no delay to go down to Avignon, where I found the old gentleman ready to receive me, and, a day or two after, entered into my new office of tutor to his nephew', who had already made fome progrefs in the Latin Grammar. I had not been long there before I got acquainted with a young abbé, or candidate for priefly orders, a countryman of mine, and an ingenious young man, of fome learning; and he finding that I had fudied philofophy and theology under the Dominicans, introduced me to one of their profeffors in this city, by whom I was courteoufly received, and foon after admitted to be one of his difciples. This father, who was a. man of fingular modefty and humanity, and was reputed a faint, paid me an uncommon regard upon my firf admiffion to his lectures, and made an apology to the reft of his fcholars for recapitulating fome of his former leflons and expofitions, in gratiam, as he was pleafed to word it, charifimi nofri novi difcipuli, that I might the better underftand what he was then, and afterwards, to deliver to us. This great condefcenfion, which had not been thewed

## ( 105 )

thewed to me by either of the profeffors of the laft univerfity, and which I fince underftood was not ufual among them, did highly oblige mé, and I would have been glad to have made fuch a proficiency under him, as might have, in fome meafure, anfwered his fingular kindnefs to me, which be ftill continued to exprefs all the time I went to hear him, but my misfortune was, that I was fill fo unacquainted as well as difgufted at the fubtilities of the fchool, and met with fuch crampt diftinctions and technical terms. I was fill a ftranger to, and was afhamed to afk the meaning of from any of the fcholars, who were far enough from thinking me fo great a novice to the language of the Thomifts, that I began again, in, fpite of all his careffes, and my own eager defires, to defpair of ever becoming a theologian; and thefe difficulties added to the lazy and unthinking habit I had fo long indulged, made me at length forbear going any more to hear him.
I have already hinted that my mother's circumflances were too narrow for the expence I had already put her to, and my father

## ( 106 )

was fitl more unable to give her any affiftance in it, though he was not a little pleafed at the great progrefs he was told I had made for my years. - Her hopes and mine were, indeed, that I might by that means introduce myfelf as a tutor into fome good family, and fave her all farther charges. But I had been fo far neglected in the other parts of my education, had fo little addrefs or politenefs, and knew fo little of the world, that I could not look upon myfelf as fit for fuch an employment among perfons above the common rank, and my pride would not let me aim at any thing below it; fo that inftead of trying as I might, and ought to have done, I was rather become carelefs and indifferent about it, and I was indeed both too young and toó naturally unfit for it. Notwithftanding which, fome of my acquaintance, unknown or undefired, got me into a middling family, where I was upon fomewhat better terms than with my old counfellor 3 . but the overgrown youth, who was put under my care, and was much older, and taller by the head and fhoulders than I, bad, by that time, contracted fuch an in-dolence,

## ( 107 )

lence, or rather averfenefs, both to the Latin tongue, and to other laudable ftudies, that had I been ever fo diligent in teaching him, it would have been to little purpofe, becaufe, as I foon found, he wanted. parts as well as inclination for ftudy; fo that we fpent more of our time in playing on the violin and flute than at our books. His mother, who heard us at it longer and oftner than the thought was confiftent with the progrefs the expected him to make under me, complained more than once of it to me; upon which I made no difficulty to tell her, that a greater degree of application would rather confirm him in his averfenefs, than reconcile him to his ftudy, "as he had fo fmall a capacity for it. I left this foon after for a better place with a perfon of diftinction, who jntrufted two fons of his to my care, both very young, and fooiled by the mother, that the eldeft, above feven years of age, could but juft read, and neither of them inclined to learn. I tried what I could to bring them to it, but to little purpofe, except a-little hiftory, which the eldeft took more freely to, but the mother's indulgence

## ( 108 )

gence was not the only obftacle, and as the was a fprightly lady, and her fpoufe fomewhat heavy, though not old, I foon found by her behaviour, and her parting beds with him foon after my coming, that, the would have been better pleafed I had transferred my care from them to her; and as I was naturally fond of ingratiating myfelf with the fex, I indulged her in all her little foibles, but without having the leaft defign of going farther than a bare complaifance, in order to gain her efteem and admiration, rather than her affection and to. fatisfy my own vanity, rather than cherifh a dangerous paffion for her.' This made me to take frequent occafions to recommend myfelf by falfe merit, fince I had no real one that could do it, by preteriding to more virtue and religion than I had, and to palliate the low circumitances of my parents by fome vain excufes, and pretences, all which I did with fo, little caution, and in fo aukward a manner, as made me appear rather more defpicable in her eyes, confidering the mean appearance I made, and which was owing chiefly to my own negligence and bad œeconomy.

## ( 109 )

All there difadvantages, however, might have been eafily overlooked, and I might have been readily fuffered to indulge my own prevailing paffion, if I could but have thewed more concern for hers.
It is not my defign to dwell on fuch fcenes as thefe, much lefs to afcribe my neglect and overlooking the reveral diftant offers made by fo agreeable a perfon to my own virtue. I might more juftly impute it to my'satural fheepifh bafhfulnefs, and unexperienced youth; however, after a fix month's ftay, and fome vifible proofs that it was not in my power to conquer it, I perceived a ftrange coldnefs to fucceed, which made me think it would not be long before I was difcharged. She was foon after, vifited by fome relations, who perfuaded her to go and fpend fome partoof the fummer with them about twenty miles off. They; efpecially the gentlemen, affected the air of libertines, and all of them expreffed a fingular contempt for the finperftitions of the church of Rome, by which I gueffed them to be concealed Proteftants, of whom there were great numbers in Languedoc, Provence, Dauphinee, and

## ( 110 )

and $I$ have had fince reafon to think, that my young lady was fo likewife, by her light behaviour at church, and on other occafions. I had fome fmall difputes with them, being then very zealous for that church, but they knowing that I had fudied divinity, and fearing, I fuppofe, left too eager an oppofition to what I urged againft them hould caufe a difcovery, they declined entering the lift with me any farther, and I then found, for the firt time, that the Proteftants had more to fay for themfelves than I had ever imagined; for the divinity we were taught at the fchools feldom meddled with the controverfies between us and the Proteftants, fo that had it not been for fear, thofe gentlemen, I found, might eafily have foiled me, notwihftanding all my theology. The lady was preparing for her journey, and was to take her fons with hef, yet kept me in fufpenfe whether I was to accompany her, or ftay with her huiband, or be difcharged. I have had reafon to think fince, that fhe had an end in it ; but finding my behaviour fill aukward and unpromifing, notwithftanding fome frefh effays, which I
did not then fo well comprehend, fhe left it to her hufband, who was a perfon that cared for nothing but his bottle, and left her to do as fhe pleafed in every thing elfe, to acquaint me with the news that they fhould have no farther occafion for me. I was more grieved than furprifed at it, which, fhe perceiving, occafioned one more fnare to be laid by means of the chambermaid, which proving fill unfuccefsful, and this was the very night before they were to fet out, I was defpifed and laughed at, and given to underftand, that I might thank myrelf if the lady and I went different ways.
I have already hinted that virtue and religion had little or no thare in my difappointing her, but rather a vanity of being thought more chafte than I really, was, which kept me fo indeed, as to the act, not only on this, but many other rencounters, though in heart and thought few men were more ftrangers to that virtue than I, even at thofe tender years; and though religion, which, in all my foolifs extravagancies, I never once loft fight of, held fill fome check on my mind, yet

## (112)

it could hardly turn even the fcale againt any favourite paffion of mine, farther than to make me condemn myfelf after having yielded to it; fo that it was rather the fear' of a repulfe, or fome other or worfe confequence that kept me from thewing an equal ardor for her, whatever opinion my different behaviour might give her of me. The company and the were no fooner gone than I took the road to Avignon, where I heard that my old counfellor was gone home, with his nephews, to my no fmall grief, efpecially as my pockets were then low; the widow where we had boarded very poor, and I had fo few acquaintance in that city; however, I ventured to ftay with her till I could write to my mother for a frefh fupply, or till fomething better fell in my way, though I had little reafon to expect any fuccefs from either; being by this time become very fhabby in cloaths and linnen, and more indolent and inactive than ever. To ward off, as much as poffible, the pungent mortification of my prefent circumftances, I had recourfe to my old ftratagem, of cloathing myfelf with fome falfe merit for want

## ( 113 )

of a great one, and of pretending to be a fufferer for religion for a too great attachment to the church, and laying moft of the blame on my own father, as ufing me the more feverely on that account; all which, though abominably falfe in every refpect, yet being too eafily liftened to by fome of my acquaintance, efpecially among the friars, did gain me fo much pity and admiration, as foothed my vanity for the prefent, though it did not anfwer the main end I propofed, its introducing me into fome new family as a tutor, and at the fame time accounting, in fome tolerable meafure, for the mean appearance I then made.
I was about the fame time informed that the famed fair of Baucaire, a city in Languedoc, on the Rhone, and one of the largeft fairs in Europe, was at hand, and that among the great concourfe at it, I might meet with fome of my own townfmen, from whom I might get a frefh fup. ply. I went accordingly, and found there feveral merchants of my acquaintance, who furnifhed me with as much money for the prefent, as would juft ferve, but, on the

## (1i4)

next day, when I expected to have received a much larger fum, I only met with a fevere reprimand for my mean appearance, and for not having made a better ufe of the opportunities I had had of difcharging my mother from all future expences on my account. I excufed it as well as I could to them, they being no itrangers to the great poverty, not to fay univerfal mifery, that then reigned at Avignon, where the ftreets abounded with people, who, from living very comfortably, and fome of them richly, on the filk manufacture of the place, were, on the decay of it, reduced to the lowett degree of beggary. They told me, that though that was too' truly the cafe of the tradefmen, yet the priefts and monks lived in as much plenty as ever, and a lad of my parts and learning might eafily have found means to have recommended himfelf, to fome of them, inftead of appearing in fuch a guife as I did, and which they faid made them apprehenfive I had taken up fome ill courfes. This cenfure, which was no lefs unjuft than fevere, if they fpoke what they thought, did cut me to the heart; for no youth

## (i15)

youth could be more free from the vices of-drinking, gaming, intriguing, \&cc. than I was. Happy it would have been for. me if I could have as eafily difculpated myfelf from thofe of indolence, vanity, and bad œconomy; for thele were the true fources of my misfortunes, infomuch that I am perfuaded, if they had fupplied me with as great a fum, as I could in reafon have defired, I fhould have been induced to have laid out the greateft part of it in fuch curious nicknacks. and triffes as that fair affords, efpecially of the mufical kind; for I had already, in that thort interval, agreed for a good number of them; but whèther they had fet any body to watch my motions, and gueffed at the prepofterous ufe I hould make of what money they might lend me, or whateve? other reafon they might have, they abfolutely refured to let me have even fo much as would bring me back to Avignon; fo that one may eafily imagine the difmal

- plight I was in all the way thither,' to fay nothing of that mortification I hould meet with among my acquaintance there at my I ill fuccefs. I found; however, a plaufible


## ( 116 )

excure for it, by pretending that I was come a day or two too late, and that the merchants were, by that time, fo thort of cafh that they could not fupply me, but that they would remit me what I wanted foon after their return home. I likewife told my old landlady, to whom I was hardly indebted for a quarter of a year's board and lodging, that I expected two of them to be there fhortly at an approaching fair, which was actually true, and the knew and dealt with one of them for fome fort of goods, fo that had I had the patience to have ftaid till then, my mother, who had expreffed no fmall refentment at their ungenerous refufal, would not have failed fending me a frefh fupply by them; whereas, hearing that I had left the place, The fent only what would pay the poor woman, whilf I', unknown to her, or any one elfe, had taken a refolution to return home, bare as I was of money. and cloaths. I lately took notice of my fhameful pretence of being a kind of fufferer for religion, to fome of my acquaintance, and tho' vanity and my then ill plight was my only incentive to it, I began now to think

## ( 117 )

it might be made a means of facilitating. my long journey homewards; I went accordingly and furnihed myfelf with a kind of pafs, or certificate, at a proper office, fignifying that I was a young ftudent intheology, of Irif extract, and that I had left the country for the fake of religion, by which is commonly implied the Roman Catholic, and that I was then going on a pilgrimage to Rome. Thiş abfurd and falle affertion coft me fince many a fhameful lye to make it pafs for current, efpecially as often as I met with any perfons who had any tolerable knowledge of Irifh affairs, to which I was an utter ftranger. I did, indeed, know feveral Englifh and Irih, who had followed king James's fortune, and were well refpected in France, Italy, \&c., but my vanity could not be fatisfied' with the credit of paffing for the fon of fome one of them; I wanted to have it thought my own voluntary act, that I forfook that country and my parents, and fortune, for the fake of religion. Had the fecretary, from whom I had procured that certificate, been ever fo little diffident, my very name, which had nothing of Irifh
ut Englifh, but which my pride would not let me forego, becaufe it had fomething of quality in it, would eafily have difcovered the roguery of the pretence; and this I mention to flew my rafhnefs and ignorance, of which I hall give a further inftance, in the method I took immédiately after obtaining the pafs, to equip myfelf in a pilgrim's garb; for I was not in a condition to purchafe one, tho' it confifted only of a long ftaff handfomely turned, and a fhort leathern or oil-cloth cloak, not unlike what the women call a pelerine. However, I had obferved fuch a one in a chapel belonging to a pariflichurch, and dedicated to a miraculous faint, which, I fuppore, had been fet up there as a monument of gratitude by fome wandering pilgrim come to the end of his journey. The chapel was never without a number of devotees, who prayed and burnt tapers before the image of the faint ; but this did not deter me from venturing in, and taking both ftaff and cloak away at noon-day; had I been examined about it, I was only furnifhed with a juvenile prefence, that I looked upon it to be fet up
there

## ( 119 ).

there to accommodate fueh pilgrims as could not otherwife provide themfelves with it. How far fuch a poor excufe might have gone I know not, neither did I trouble my head about it; however, I efcaped without fuch an enquiry, and carried it off unmolefted, and made what hafte I could to fome private coruer, where I threw the cloak over my fhoulders, and walked with a fanctified gravity with the flaff in my hand, till 1 was got out of the city.
Being thus accoutred, and furnilhed with a pafs to my mind, I began at all proper places to beg my way in a fluent Latin; accofting only clergymen, or perfons of figure, by whom I could be underftood, and was moft likely to be relieyed; and If found them mofly fo generous' and credulous, that had I bad the leaft propenfity to provide for hereafter, I might eafily have faved a good deal of money, and put myfelf into a much more creditable garb, before I had gone through a, fcore or two of miles; but fuch was my vanity and extravagance, that as foon as I had got what I thought a fufficient viaticum, I begged no more, but viewed every thing worth
feeing, then retired to fome inn, where I fpent my money as freely as I got it, not without fome fuch aukward tokens of generofity, as better fuited with my vanity than my prefent circumftances. The nearer I drew to my native place, the more irrefolute $I$ grew, whether I fhould pay a vifit to my mother, or continue my journey to Rome; the concern I knew the muft be in about me, ftrongly inclined me to the former, but my uncommon mean garb, which was become only more fcandalous by the length of the journey, made me fo afhamed to be feen either by her, or any of my friends, that I fully refolved on the latter. I had, in order to it , wheeled about to the left, to leave the place at fome twenty or thirty miles diftance, and was goi into a fmall town where I little expected to be known, when venturing on the Sunday into the church, at the time of high mafs, I was furprifed to fee fome perfons, efpecially 'two or three gentlewomen, whofe chief refidence was at my native city, but who it feems were fpending part. of the fummer at that place, and who, in fpight of my being thus tranf:

## , (12I)

tranfmogrified, did eafily recall me to mind, and gave me to underftand they did. I was fo fhocked at it, that I left the church at the moft folemn part of the fervice, when they were moft intent on their devotions, not caring to ftand an examen from them, and made the beft of my way through private paths, to avoid being caught if purfued. Whether I was fo:I know not, but the fight of them made fuch a ftrong impreffion on my mind, and raifed fuch an earneft defire in me of reeing once more that beloved city, efpecially confidering that it was now impoffible to conceal either my way of travelling, or mean appearance from my friends, that as foon as I thought myfelf out of the reach of a purfuit, I took the direct road homeward, with an intent to go and fatisfy my poor anxious mother, before fhe got the intelligence from other hands, and confult with her, whether I Chould purfue my journey to Rome, or get into any other way the liked better. And I only took care to enter the city in the dusk of the evening, and got to her houle unperceived by any but thofe of the family.

## ( 122 )

My poor mother was glad to fee mé, tho' forry to behold the mean garb I was in, and failed not, though with her ufual tendernefs, to chide me, for having made fo bad an ufe of the opportunities, fhe fuppofed I had had, of pufhing my fortune, which, fhe knew as well as I, was but too much owing to my indolence. Much more reafon would the have had to chide me, had the known how much of my time I had trifled away during the laft, year and half I had been abfent from her; but that I concealed from her, and the good woman was fometimes inclined to think, that my too great eagernefs after. my ftudies had made me neglect every thing elfe. But I was greatly furprifed at the end of two or three days, during which I had kept as much from fight as I could, to hear her propofe to me, fince I had found out fo cheap; fafe, and eafy a way of travelling, to go and pay a vifit to my father, who then lived fome hundreds of miles from her, and try what I could get him to do for me; and I had the more reafon to wonder at her propofal, becaufe fhe knew, as well as I, that a tradef.

## ( 123 )

tradefman of our town, who had been with him about two or three years before, had brought us a very indifferent account of his circumftances. This made me lufpect that a coufin of mine, and a great favourite of hers, whofe fortune was in no wife fuitable to his high fpirit, had put that Atrange project in her head, that I might be far enough out of the way of obftructing her kindnefs to him. Whether there was any real foundation for my fufpicion, I cannot fay;' but the furprize the obferved me to be in at her propofal, made fuch an imprefion upon her, that the forgot nothing that could affure me of her maternal and unalterable tendernefs, alledging that fhe only wanted to be better fatisfied of the condition my father was in, than the was from the report of the tradefman above mentioned, and adding, that in cafe I found it not to my liking, and him as tender as I might expect, fhe charged me exprefly to leave him, and come back to her as foon as poffible, and by no means to ftay longer than a year from her, unlefs I could convince her that it was yery much to my advantage.

Being

## ( 124 )

Being thus far fatisfied of her maternal affection, I eafily confented to take the journey, having by that time contracted an inclination to ramble and fee new countries, and as it was a long and dangerous one, we thought it improper to alter my drefs, the meanefs of which would rather be a fafeguard; however, fhe thought fit to few up a fmall quantity, of gold to my cloaths, which, fhe faid, would ferve to buy me fome better ones; when I came near the end of my journey. My ftaff and cloak, with the addition of a long loofe gown, made of a light kind of black buckram to cover the reft from duft, were fent by a man to a place on the road, about four miles off; and very early in the morning I took a forrowful leave of my mother, and the of me, and the repeated her charge to me to return to her, if I did not find things to my fatisfaction. When I came to the place where my pilgrim's drefs waited for me, I put it on, and went on not without a heavy heart, tho' without the leaft doubt of my mother's conftant affection: My direct rout was thro' the firft great univerfity where I had be-

## ( 125 )

gan to ftudy theology, fo that $I$ was forced to wheel about to avoid it, for fear of being known. All the reft of the way I was an utter franger to, and I met frequently with fome objects that made me fhrink, tho it was a confiderable high road; now and then at fome lonely place lay the carcafe of a man rotting and ftinking on the ground by the way-fide, with a rope about his neck, which was faftened to a poft about two or three yards diftance, and thefe were the bodies of highwaymen, or rather of foldiers, failors, mariners, or even galleyDlaves, difbanded after the peace, of Ref= wick, who, having neither home nor occupation, ufed to infeft the roads in troops, plunder towns and villages, and when taken were hanged at the county-town by dozens, or even fcores fometimes, after which their bodies were thus expofed along the highway in terrorem. At other places one met with croffes, either of wood or ftone, the higheft not above two or three feet, with infriptions to this purport; " pray for the foul of A. B. or of a " ftranger that was found murdered on this " Spot.." Thefe deterring objects made me willing

## ( 126 )

willing to affociate myfelf to fome feio low-travellers whom I met on the farie road; but fuch was my vanity, that I never renewed the pilgrim's trade of begging whilf any of my money lafted, but was rather lavih of it on fome of them, tho' I know not how foon I might feel the want of it; and I had not refumed it long before I met with fuch a mortification as made me heartily repent of my folly. I was to go through the celebrated city of Lyons, abounding with che fineft buildings and other curiofities, which I was very defirous to fee; and when I came to one of the gates, was asked by an officer, in a livery like our beadles, whether I wanted a viaticum ? Not knowing the confequence of his queftion, I anfwered in the affirmative, and was bid immediately to follow him. I was furprifed at the length of the way he led 'me, and obferved feveral fine churches, palaces, fquares, \&cc. which I food fill to admire, but was not fuffered to do fo long; and at length, after about an hour and half's' good walking, was told, that that was the oppofite gate at which I was

## ( 127 )

to go out and purfue my journey; he then clapped a couple of pence into my hand, and told me, that I muft not venture back into the city under fome fevere punifhment, and left me quite aftonifhed and unable to reply. As foon as I had recovered myfelf, I began to reflect on my extravagance and difappointment in a mort lively manner, but thought it beft, however, to follow his advice; rather than expofe myfelf to fome hameful treatment, if I attempted to return. What increafed my concern was, the fear of finding the fame method obferved in every great city I came to, but, happily for me; it proved otherwife, and I not only went through them all without moleftation, but ftaid in fome of them long enough to view every thing worth reeing, and to converfe with men of learning and piety, from' whom I received fome tokens of their generofity.
The misfortune was, that my rafnnefs and vanity would not fuffer me to keep within due bounds, but I muft fet myrelf off to the higheft advantage, by pretending to greater merit and learning than was confiltent
ent even with common prudence, as it expofed me to the continual danger of a fhameful difcovery. I took notice heretofore how little progrefs I had made in the Greek tongue, rather through the ignorance and neglect of fome of my teachers, than want of capacity or application, but now I pretended to be not only mafter of it, but likewife in fome meafure of the Hebrew, though I knew not a fingle letter of the latter, and had only feen fome Hebrew books belonging to the Jews of Avignon, by which I juft could diftinguifh that from other characters; the truth is, that neither that nor any of the oriental tongues, nor even the Greek, were much ftudied by the clergy; fo I was not under any great danger on that account, though I own I have been fometimes foiled at the latter, becaufe I commonly addreffed myfelf to the priefts, among whom I met, now and then, with one who underfood it. I muft alfo acknowledge that I found the generality of them very charitable, and fome of them even generous, though it the more redounds tomy fhame, feeing neither the meannefs of my garb, of which
twhich yet I was not a little afhanied, nor Whe mortifying accidents that had happened to me could prevail upon me to fave a fhilling towards buying any thing better. I had indeed fome hopes to do fo, as I' came nearer to my father, but here I was again juflly difappointed; the two or three laft provinces I was.to pafs through, having been greatly impoverifhed, and even laid wafte by the late war, fo that I found the clergy here leis rich and generous; and fo great poverty reigned among the laity, that I had much ado to get fufficient fubfiftance among them. I hould likewife obferve here, that every town, or even village I came through, had a number of Lutherans and Calvinits, who were fill in a worfe condition, infomuch that theirminifters were obliged to keep fome poor inn or alehoufe for fubfiftance; fo that by that time I bad reached my father - I was quite pennylers and threadbare. I prefently, however, made myfelf known to

- him, though to his great furprife, not only on that account, but as it was fuch an unexpected vifit; of which he had not had thei leaft notice. given him, nor did at all K
dream
dream of. The city where I met him bed ing about three or four miles from his houfe, he clapped a fmall piece in my hand, and directed me to a houfe where I might get fome refrefhment, and towards night conducted me to his own home, which I was not a little furprifed to find even meaner than our townfman had defcribed to my mother and me. Here he bid me a frefh and moft tender welcome, and expreffed fuch a vifible concern that he was not able to give me at leaft as good entertainment as $I$ had been ufed to with my mother, that I was hardly able to make him a proper anfwer.
And indeed the difference 1 found between the two places, the forlorn condition I faw myfelf in, the mean figure I made in an obfcure kind of village, my being now not only out of the way of any improvement, but in danger of lofng what I had got, afforded me fuch a difmal profpect, that I could not eafily conceal my uneafinefs, and, in a little time, a more than ordinary defire of returning to my old home, fince this new one was in every refpect fo little inviting to me: He found it no lefs diffi-
cuit


## ( 1 दुt )

Puilt to conceal his diflike of my returning to my mother, and tried all he could to diffuade me from it. He advifed me to. try my fortune at two or three neighbouring cities or univerfitics, and I complied with his defire, but found much greater difcouragements than $I$ could expect : firft, the Jefuits were the teachers in all of them, and I had fudied with the Dominicans, between whom and them there never was. a right underfanding, but rather quite the contrary. I wà got into a new country, (Germany) where the pronunciation of the Latin differed fo much from that I had been ufed to, that though no one could fpeak it more fluently than I, I neither could underfand them, nor make myfelf underfood by them, without the greateft difficulty. The country had been fo ruined by the war, that thofe few mendicant fcholars that remained in thofe uni" verfities *, might be rather faid to farve than
** Mot of the univerfities of Germany have a number of thefe mendicant ftudents, who, as foon as the fchool-hours are over, go along the freets from houfe to houfe, finging fome pious Latin verfes to excite people's charity; and, in fome opulent cities, get enough to live well and K 2
com.

## ( 132 )

to fubirit. My youth and ignorance of the German tongue, as well as my foreig: 1 pronunciation of the Latin and Greek, would likewife have difqualified me for being a tutor in any family, had there been any in a condition to have maintained one; fo that after all my efforts, which I rather tried out of obedience to my father, than any likely hopes I could have of fuccefs, I returned to him re infecta, all which only ferved to revive my defires of returning to my mother. But he being ftill as averfe to it as ever, bethought himfelf of a new way to diffuade me from it, and with fo much art at the fame time, that I could not difcover his aim. He had feen the greateft part of Europe, and
comfortably, and to buy all the books that are neceffary for them, by which means fome of them become very learned men, and get to good preferment; but as it wat quite otherwife in thefe, and, indeed, every city along the Rhine, quite down below the great city of Cologn (where the French forces had caufed fuch dreadful delapidations as could not be feen without horror); thefe univerfities had been long fince forfaken by all thofe mendicant ftudents, who could no longer find means of fubfifting them. And this I afterwards obferved to be the cafe in every place where the French troops had been, as I may bave further occafion to thew in the fequel:

## ( 133 )

pould give an extraordinary account of it, Ae underftood feveral of its languages, particularly the Italian, French, Spanifts and German, and expatiated much on the advantages he had gained by travelling; and expreffed, at fome diftance, a defire that I hould vifit feveral of thofe countries I had not yet feen, particularly thofe of Holland, Flanders, and Brabant, which he highly commended for their opulence, and the great number of learned men they produced, and expatiated much on their hofpitality, generofity, and fondnefs for men of parts and genius, and how greatly I might be admired and promoted there on account of my learning, knowledge of languages and fciences, and for having already travelled through fo many confiderable parts of the world, all which he faid was the more furprifing, as I was fill fo very young, for I was then hardly full fixteen years old. He could not indeed have found a more effectual way than that of foothing my vanity, to make me give wholly into his views, and as to the objection of the want of money, confidering how well acquainted I was with the

## ( 134 )

4
way of travelling at free-coft, he faid could not but promife myfelf much bettef fuccefs through thofe countries, where the peoples generofity was equal to their known opulence.
I was now (unknown to him) to think of fome more cunning, fafe, and effectual way of travelling than that I had followed in my two former journies; and fince $I$ found that my paffing for an Irihman and a fufferer for religion, did not only expofe me to the danger of being difcovered, but came fhort of the merit and admiration I had expected from it, I refolved on a new project, which, though equally hazardous, I had not fenfe enough to forefee, and tho' ftill more dihoneft, I had not virtue enough to deter me from. I fay, unknown to my father, for I had carefully concealed all the vile indirect pretences I had already ufed, and much more was I now obliged to do fo, knowing him to be fo upright and religious a man, that I thould not only have incurred his utmoft anger, but that he would likewife have taken all poffible means to have deterred me from, or difappointed me in it, 1

## ( 135 )

it. I recollected, that whilit I was learnVing humanity, rhetoric and geography with the Jefuits, I had heard them fpeak of the Eaft-Indies, China, Japan, \&cc. and expatiate much in praife of thofe countries, and the ingenuity of the inhabitants. The idea they had given us of them was indeed too general and impèrfent, at leaft what I remembered of it, was by far too Chort and confufed, for a perfon of the leaft prudence or forecaft to have builc fuch a wild project upon, becaufe all the notion they had given us of it, was only from their maps and comments upon them, for they made ufe of geographical books. However, I was rafh enough to think, that what I wanted of à right knowledge of them, I might make up by the frength of a pregnant invention, in which I flattered myfelf I might fucceed the more. eafily, as I fuppofed they were fo little known by the generality of Europeans, that they were only looked upon, in the lump, to be Antipodes to them in almoft every refpect, as religion, manners, dreff, \&c. This was my crude notion of the matter, which I thought afforded' a vaft K4 frope

## ( 136 )

fcope to a fertile fancy to work upon, and I had no mittruft of myeff on that liead I had likewife heard that their way of writing differed very much from ours, but how, and in what, I was altogether ignorant, or bad quite forgot it, and fo took it into my head, that like the Hebrew, and other oriental tongues I had heard of, they muft write from the right to the leff, and on this purerile fuppofition, I fet about excogitating of an alphabet that might anfwer my purpofe. Another thing that fhewed my inconfiderate folly was, that tho' I could not but know that the Greeks and Hebrews:had particular names for their letters, it never came once into my head to imitate them in that, as I had in the figures, powers, \&c. of fome of the letters on a fuppofition, that as they might flow originally from the fame fountain, fo they might be reafonably imagined to retain fill fome kind of refemblance. The truth is, my time was fhort, and knowledge in what I went about fo very fmall and confufed, and what I did was by fealth, and fear of being detected by my father; that I was foon after made fenfible of my

## ( $137^{\circ}$ )

want of forecaft, when I came to conyerfe with proper judges, and found the neceffity not only of inventing names for the letters, but to make feveral amendments to my wild fcheme, as I became better acquainted with thofe Eaftern countries.
However, confidering my tender yeàrs, fmall experience, and other fuch difadvantages, I have had fince no fmall caufe to wonder how 1 could excogitate not only fuch an alphabet, and names of letters, but likewife many other particulars equally difficult, fuch as a confiderable piece of a new language and grammar, a new divifion of the year into twenty months, a new religion, \&c. and all out of my own head, in order to ftuff them into that moft abominable romance which.I publifhed foon after my coming into England, and which occafioned fuch variety of opinions concerning it, and its Chamelefs author; fome thinking it above the capacity of fuch a young fellow to invent, and others believing it the refult of long thought and contrivance. Alas, for me, my fancy was but too fertile and ready for all fuch things,
things, when I fet about them, and when any queftion has been ftarted or a fudden about matters I was ever fo unprepared for, I feldom found mytelf at a lofs for a quick anfwer, which, if fatisfactory, I flored up in my retentive memory. But to return to my alphabet, as foon as I had finifhed it to my mind, I began to inure my hand to write it with fome readinefs, that it might upon occafion appear natural to me, which I found the more difficult, as. I never was expert at my pen, and was quite unufed to this backward way of writing; and this obliged me to alter the form of fome of them, for the more eafy tracing them with the pen, and to contrive fome abreviations and joining of letters, and other fuch improvements for expedition, which done, I thought myfelf fufficiently prepared for paffing fora Japanefe, converted to Chriftianity. The only difficulty was, how to reconcile this new and vile affumption with my Avignon certificate, which was not to be done but by copying it anew, and altering it where I faw fit, and clapping the feal from the original one to the counterfeit; but though I

## ( 139 )

wras ready enough al wording it to m mind, I wrote fo indifferent a hand; that it could never pafs for that of a fecretary of a vice-legate, and to have had it done by a better penman was too difficult and hazardous for me to venture. At length
I thought it fafeft to truft to my copying it as well as I could, with its flourihes and ornaments, though I did it in fuch a coarfe and clumfy manner, that it would hardly have paffed for a tolerable counterfeit. There was likewife another danger of a difcovery from the different marks and make of the German and Avignon paper, but that never came then in my bead; fo that having made what alterations I thought proper in the tenor of the pafs, and clapping the old feal to it, I made no difficulty to truft the reft to fortune, and took a melancholy leave of my poor father, who shed abundance of tears over me, and wifhed me all poffible bleffings and fuccefs, not dreaming how little this new project of mine deferved of either; and when I was got at fome diftance from him, I put on my old pilgrim's habit, and began my journey with a kind of heavy heart, accord-

## ( 140 )

according to the rout he had penned down for me, and which was quite oppofite to that which would have brought me to my own home. I had, indeed, taken care to write to my anxious mother, and to acquaint ber with what had paffed between my father and me, and with my defire of taking a tour into the Low Countries before I returned to her, but I had afterwards reafon to fear, that the melancholy fyle in which it was worded, did rather increafe than mitigate her concern for her now really worthlefs fon; for, from that time, neither fhe, nor yet my father, ever heard of me more, nor I of them, and, in all likelihood, both of them have bewailed my lofs at a much greater rate than. I deferved, if it did not prove the means of fhortening their days.
The reader may fee by all this, what a ralh and abandoned fellow I was, how loft to all fenfe of religion, nature and reafon, and how I expofed myfelf to $q$ igmy dangers, over head and ears, to ${ }^{\text {indulge a fa- }}$ vourite paffion, and without the leaft profpect of reaping any benefit from it, or even aiming at it. However, this is nothing in

## ( 141 )

parion of what is to follow, and it is rai ther a wonder that fo bad a beginning, fo ill concerted, and worfe followed, hath not had a more dreadful ending, and $\cdot 1$ can only afcribe it to the undeferved mercy of God, that it did not end in my total ruin of body and foul. And I muft defire the reader to bear ftill in mind the confideration of my tender years, and the difadvantages of my wrong education, if he intends to read what is to follow with any. tolerable patience, at feaft till he comes to fome more agreeable frenes: In the mean time, as Iam now entering into One of the blackeft hhame and guilt, I fincerely proteft, that it is the fartheft from ny heart to aggravate or extenuate either, in order to render the following account more furprizing or agreeable, but to relate the whole with the fame fincerity, as I hould be willing to do it, or wifh it to have been done, at my laft moments. And I hope I thall be the more readily believed, as I do n th delign to have it printed till after my © 'ath, 'when all finifter views will be quite taken away, and nothing be able to yield any fatisfaction on the other fide of the

## ( 142 )

grave, but the confcioufnefs of its fincerity, effecially confidering that I fhall leave neither children nor relations to reap any benefit from this narrative. But to return to my propofed rout :
I was at firt to vifit all the confiderable cities on both fides of the Rhine, as they lay in my way to that of Cologn, whither I pretended to go on a religious pilgrimage to the three kings, whofe remains are faid to be there interred in the cathedral ${ }^{*}$, to which there is a great refort of devotees almoft all the year: for the Germans are equally fond of pilgrims that come to any of their great faints, as the Italians are of thofe that come to Rome or Loretto, or

* Thofe were the wife men that came to worfhip our Infant Saviour, and are, by the church of Röme, ftilet kings, and pretended to have been oaly three, whom they call Gafpar, Meichior and Balthazar; the legend adds, that upon their being warned not to return to Jerufalem, they took the way to Cologn, and died, and were buried there. Their heads are expofed in a fately fhrine behind the great altar every Wednefday, and they thew you the gate by the Rhine-fide, at which it is pretended they came in by, and which hath been fince walled. This Cathedral doth likewife contain a number of other relicks, and miraculons pictures to feed the devotion of the valgar, and bring a conflant concourfe of people thither.


## ( 143 )

the Spaniards to thofe that go to St. Jago de Compoftella; fo that I did not doubt of mineeting with a kind recéption wherever I came. I fhall not take up the reader's time in defcribing the places I came through, that being much better done in books of travels; but only obferve, that I found them all in a moft difmal plight, moft of the fine buildings ruinated, noble palaces with only the bare walls, half demolifhed, cathedrals, and other ftately churches, built of the fineft marble and other coftly ftones finely carved, battered half down, and nothing left fit for divine fervice but the choir or chancel, which in many places were quite unroofed, and only thatched with ftraw. All the reft appeared in a fill more woeful condition, whereever the conquering arms of Lewis XIV. had penetrated, for this was but a few years after the peace of Refwick, fo that they had not had time to recover themfelves from thefe dreadful ravages.
An accident happened to me before I had gone far, which, had I been lefs rafh and inconfiderate, might have deterred me from purfuing my fham pilgrimage farther.

## ( 144 )

It was at the city of Landau, garrifoned by the French, and commanded by an old experienced officer, and was then a very ftrong place, and the laft town they had in Alface. The familiarity I was obferved to carry on with fome of the inferior officers and foldiers of the garrifon, who were pleafed with the whimfical account I gave of myfelf and my pretended country; made me fufpected of being a fpy, and as fuch I was accordingly conducted by a file of mufqueteers to the governor, who, not being fatisfied with my account, ordered me to be fent to gaol, where I was at firf confined in a noifome place for fome hours, but afterwards admitted to the liberty of the prifon till the next day, when I was conducted in the fame manoer out of the city, and forbid, under the fevereft penalties, to return into it*. This dreadful efcape might, one would

[^1]
## 145 )

would think, have opened my eyes to fee the folly and danger of my ill-concerted fcheme, as well as reminded me of my promife of returning to my poor anxious mother, if I did not think fit to flay with my father. But my religion and prudence were much of a piece, juft fufficient to make me apply myfelf to heaven in time of danger, which was no fooner blown over, but I as quickly forgot what I owed to either, except that I looked on myfelf as obliged to affift at the church offices, fuch as mafs, vefpers, \&c. as often as opportunity offered, which I continued doing till a more wicked and abominable project made me leave it off. Thefe particulars may perhaps be thought too trifling to my readers to be worthy inferting, but to me they appear in a quite other light, and do but too plainly hew how naturally one mifcarriage draws on a worfe,
was it confiftent with my fcheme to pretend to any fkill in drawing and fortifications. However, as to the governor of the place it is moft likely that my youth and fimplicity moved his pity more than any credit he could give to what I faid for my felf; for exicepting my making a longer flay in it than is ufual for pilgrims, there had been nothing faid or done by me that could give the jealonfy of my being a $f_{p}{ }^{\prime \prime}{ }^{\prime}$.

$$
(146) .
$$

where religion and reafon have unhappily. loft their influence, or yielded it to a predominant and ungovernable paffion, and how eafily the indulging of it will, by degrees, come to quench all remorfe and conviction, and unlefs the Divine Grace interpofes, hurry a man into utter perdition. And as no man hath more fenfibly felt the fad effects of the one, as well as the bleffed ones of the other, what can I do lefs than acknowledge and adore that divine and undeferved mercy, to which alone I owe fo great, and I hope effectual, deliverance? And what caufe have I not to be, to the higheft degree, thankful that I had fuch early impreffions of religion inculcated into my mind, and which tho' fuppreffed and fmothered for a long time, by the violence of a favourite vice, did yet, in God's own time, bring me into a fenfe and abhorrence of my paft follies, and, in fome meafure, drove me from the moft dreadful danger into the arms of a merciful and forgiving Saviour, and that in fo wonderful and unhoped for a manner, that it was impoffible for me to attribute

## ( $\mathrm{I}_{47}$ )

the bleffed change to any thing but to a fupernatural grace and mercy?
I fhall, however, in the fequel, be more fuccinct, efpecially in my account of what happened to me from Landau, to the fatal time in which I was unwarily drawn into the moft abandoned piece of impofture, that of my pretended converfion to Chriftianity by Dr. James, then chaplain to a Scotch regiment garrifoned at Sluys; for to mention all thofe particulars would not only appear a moft ftupid and tedious, but an almolt incredible feries of the moft unaccountable follies and difafters that any rah youth could fall into: It will be fufficient to fay, that I travelled feveral hundred leagues through Germany, Brabant and Flanders, under the notion of a Japanefe converted to Chriftianity by fome jefuit miffionaries, and brought to Avignon, by them to be farther inftructed, as well as to avoid the dreadful punifhment inflicted on all that turn Chriftians in the dominions of the emperor of Japan. In purfuance of which hameful pretence, I kept up an outward form or religion, was frequent at church, and was fometimes

$$
L_{2} \quad \text { affected }
$$

## (. 148 )

affected with thofeduties, and, at othertimes, pinched with a tranfient remorfe and thame at the confcioufnefs of the wicked part I was. then acting. My fluency in the Latintongue, and fmattering of other branches of learning, efpecially logic, philofophy and theology, of which my tenacious memory fill preferved fome of the moft curious parts, joined to the flagrant account I gave of myfelf, procured me, indeed, more regard and a greater fhare of beneficence; than was commonly fhewed to other travellers or pilgrims, but my careleffnefs and extravagance not fuffering me to lay out any money in drefs, or even linnen, to keep me clean and decent, I, by degrees, made fo difmal and Chabby an appearance; that I outdid the very common beggars, and this misfortune brought on worfe upon me. For firft, it gave fuch an ill face and difcredit to all my pretences, as all my learning could not counterbalance; and 2dly, when I came into fome confiderable cities, which I was defirous to fee, and where they have hofpitals for pilgrims and ftrangers, with fuitable accommodations according to their rank, appearance, or recommendation,

## ( 149 )

commendation, I hewed, in vain, my counterfeit pafs, which, if I had been in a better trim, would, from the advantageous manner in which I had dreffed it, have procured a much better reception; thofe who attend on fuch occafions would feldom give themfelves the trouble of reading it, though I begged of them fo to do, but, taking it for granted, that I was one of the loweft rank, or deferving to be treated as fuch, did generally herd me among the meaneft, by which I faw myfelf in a fhort time covered with rags and vermine, and infected with a moft virulent itch. This difmal plight, one would have thought fufficient, to roufe me from my fenfelefs lethargy, and make me follow the example of the returning prodigal, efpecially, as I found, to my great mortification, that all my fair fhew of learning, made me appear now only the more derpicable in the eyes of the foberer part ; for how could even thofe, who gave any credit to what I told them; forbear fuppofing that I muft have been guilty of fome great enormity, or elfe the Jefuits, by whom I pretended to have been brought out of Japan into $L_{3}$ Avignon,

## ( 150 )

Avignon, would never have given me up to fo thameful a vagabond life; and no doubt but the far greater part believed it all a forgery; though they did not think it. worth the while to have me called to an account for it. Thus did I find my affairs grow from bad to worfe, infomuch that I was often pinched with want, and glad wöuld I have been to have returned home to my mother ; but the thought of my prefent condition. would not permit me to think of it, 'and, " perhaps, I could have preferred any death' to fo grẹat a morti-fication as it would have been both to her and me. I have, $\because$ however, had reafon to think it a mercy that I had fuch an inveterate itch, added to all my other misfortunes; for I perceived that in feveral great cities of Brabant and Flanders, there are a fort of procurefles, who wander about the ftreets, under the character of :Begines *? and.
*The true Regines are a good fort of unmarried; wo. men, who dedicate themfelves to works of charity; but indtad of being cloiltered up like the nuns, vifit the houfrs of the poorer fort, and procure them all proper relief from, the charitable rich. They likewife' extend their gare to the fick, lame, prifoners and framgers, and are known

## ( 151 )

and pick up all the likely fellows they meet with, in order to make a lewd trade of them; and I being then very young, fanguine, and likely in perfon, have now and then been invited and led by them in a feeming hofpitable manner, to fome charitable ladies to receive, as was pretended, fome token of their generofity, but, in reality, to return a lefs commendable one to the benefactrefs. But my diftemper, whether or no it was imagined to be of a worfe kind than it was; proved fuch a difgufful bar, that I never was put to the trial, otherwife I am fure neither my virtue nor prudence would have been proof againt it ; for though I was then, abfolutely innocent of any criminal commerce with any of the fex, yet, circumftanced as I was, I have reafon to believe I fhould eafily have yielded at any hazard, and this further confideration made me fillimore weary of my wretchedrefs.
known by a particular plain drefs, not unlike that of the nuns. But there are alfo many vile women, who, under the cloak of that drefs and character, carry on the trade of procureffes, and are but too commonly encouraged and fupported in it, by the profligate rich and great.

I was at length come to the celebrated city of Liege, and ftayed fome time there, to view all the curiofities of the place, and at night fook up my lodging at the hofpital, where we were likewife allowed fome kind of fupper. There I was informed that an officer was arrived at one of the fuburbs belonging to the Dutch, who inlifted people into the Dutch fervice, and gave good encouragement to. fuch vagrants as appeared fit to carry a mufket. I had no great hopes that I fhould pafs mufter with him, being both too young and fhort, as I thought, for his purpofe : however, I refolved to try, and foon perfuaded half a dozen of my fellow ragamuffians to follow me; but as nobody could have a greater averfion than I to a foldier's life, by what I had feen at my native place, where was always kept a ftrong garrifon, I began to wifh I might meet with a repulfe. The reft were prefently inlifted by the pretended officer, for he only bought them to fell them again; but when he came to me, and had heard my patched up ftory, inftead of feeming difcouraged from taking fuch a raw and tender boy, he really, to

## ( 153 )

my great furprize, fhewed me an uncommon regard, tho' I made the worft figure of any of his recruits; and I could by no means conceive the reafon of it till near a month after, during which time we were well entertained at an inn, wanting for neither victuals nor drink. He foon obferved me to be averfe to ftrong liquors, and indulged me in it. At length, having fold away all his recruits but me, he began to tell me that he had too great a regard for me, to fend me with them to carry a brown mulket, and that he defigned fomething better for me, and more fuitable to my education; but that he muft firf try to get me cured of the fcabious difeafe, which by that time had fpread itfelf all over my fkin. Accordingly he tried all proper medicines, got me phyficked, anointed, blooded, bathed, \&c. but without fuccefs. Being at length obliged to return to his then home, he got me handfomely equipt, and took me to Aix-laChapelle, where I found he kept a grand coffee-houfe, and billiards, and other games, in the moft handfome part of the city, over againft the town-hall, and here I

## ( 154 )

was to wait on the cuftomers, and to teach a boy of his to read; \&c.
I had reafon to believe that my newmafter had conceived hopes that I fhould bring a good number of cuftomers to his houfe; and, as for myfelf, I expected to find no finall fatisfaction in being feen, and fuffered to difplay my parts among them. But we found ourfelves both difappointed, in a great meafure, becaufe, tho' it was then the heighth of the feafon for drinking the waters, and the town was full of people; yet the greateft. part of them were feldom to be feen any where but-at the pump, and the walks about it, and thefe were at another and diftant part of the town ; fo that there was hardly any reforted to his coffee-houfe, except gentlemen that came thither to fpend an hour or two at billiards, backgammon, balfet, or fome other game, and thefe were men of little or no tafte for learning, except two or three French refugees, who appeared to the to be profeffed gamefters. Thefe, and now and then fome German gentlemen, 'that dropped in by chance, would condefcend to divert themfelves with

## ( 155 )

with my company, queftion me about variety of things, and hold an argument with me about fame curions or infrualing fubject, and at their going away commonly left fome marks of their generofity, which, however, my mafter gave me to underftand, I was to be contented with fuch a flare of as he fhould pleafe to allow me.
Befides his coffee-houfe, he furninhed the balls, and other places of that refort, with lemonade, orgeat, and other cocling liquors proper for the feafon, as, well as with variety of drams for fuch as liked them. And here it was that I beheld the beau monde in fuch extraordinary fplendor, as was like to have' been of the 'moft fatal confequence to me, and to have drove me to the moft defperate piece of folly and madnefs that a man in his fenfes could have been guily of, and which I fhall forbear mentioning, merely for the ill impreffion it might be apt to make on fome weak and fceptical minds; but which, while I live, I fhall never forget, nor ceafe bleffing the divine mercy which kept me back from it. And it was well for me that I was fent thither but once more, tho'

## ( 156 )

another man he kept, much older and. fitter for the bufinefs, was obliged to give daily attendance there; and I can only think that my cuticular difeafe, which difplayed itfelf too vifibly in my hands, was the caufe why I was fo feldom fent thither.
Before the feafon was over, my mafter, who had other irons in the fire, was obliged to go to Spa, fome German leagues from Aix-la-Chapelle, for a fortnight, during which time a great nobleman, at leaft one who paffed for fuch there, had run himfelf pretty deep in his debt, by fome grand entertainments he had given on feveral occafions; and it was now whifpered about, that he was juft on the point of difappearing, My miftrefs, upon the firft hint of it, told me I muft immediately fet out and fetch her hufband. The time was fo Chort, and the way fo long and difficult, confidering that I was to go on foot, that there was fcarcely any probability of my reaching the place time enough, and much lefs fo, confidering I was a ftranger to the road and to the language, that I would have willingly excufed

## ( 157 )

cured myfelf from it, and have perfuaded her to have difpatched a man and horfe to him, but the was a haughty dame, and above being advifed, fo that $I$ was forced to comply, though without any hopes of getting there time enough, in which care it would be of no fervice to him, efpecially if I fhould chance to lofe my way, of which there was fo much the more danger, as it was very intricate, and I knew not a ftep of it, nor how to be informed about it , for want of the German tongue. And indeed, though I took all the care I could, I found before I was got half way to the place, that it would be impoffible for me to avoid being fo often out, through the various windings and turnings, and crofs-roads I frequently met with, that I defpaired of reaching it in double the time. The anxiety and fear I was in was fo great, about the reception I fhould meet with, both from him and her for my fucceeding fo ill, that I began to think of preventing it, by giving them both the flip. My heart, however, hefitated a good while, and upbraided me with the ingratitude and injuftice I was
going to be guilty of, as likewife with the danger I might incur, fhould I be caught afterwards by him; for in fuch a cafe, I mult have expected nothing lefs than the higheft marks of his refentment. But when I confidered, on the other hand, that all my care and diligence could not'bring me to him time enough, and that I hould be ill treated for that which I could not avoid, I prefeired a diftant danger to one feemingly at hand; and being then juft going to crofs a high road, which I was told led to the city of Cologn, immediately took to it, with a refolution to return to my father, and then to my mother, by the fame way I had formerly gone. This laft confideration was then frong with me, as it revived in my mind the concern and grief they muft be in about me, efpecially my poor mother, who had heard nothing from me fince that melancholy letter I fent to her upon leaving my father. The thoughts of feeing again two fuch dear parents, had for enlivened me, that it had in a great meafure effaced all other reflections, particularly the remorfe of my ingratitude to my late mafter. But here I

## (. 159)

was again difappointed, not only of that happinefs, but even from the very profpect and hopes of it, and that juftly too, and by my own ftupid folly. And fince the Divine Providence had fo wonderfully delivered me from the dangers and miferies of a foldier's life, by infpiring my mafter with fentiments, whether of gain or pity, or both, and I had made fuch ungrateful returns, both to God and him, it was but juft I hould plunge myfelf into the mifery and danger I was fo unworthy to efcape.
I had already paffed through Cologn, and Bon the refidence of the elector of Co $\operatorname{logn}$, and got to another city of his electorate likewife on the Rhine, when upon my entering it at one of the gates, I was accofted by a perfon genteely dreffed, who, among feveral other queftions, afked me if I was willing to enter into that elector's fervice, and ufed fome of the ufual topicks to induce me to it. I was furprifed at his quction, and readily enough anfwered in the negative, but was foon after perfuaded by him to accept his offer, tho' without the leaft force or circumvention, and

## ( 160 )

and merely by my own weaknefs and ftupidity, or rather fome judicial fatality, for nothing lefs than that I fhould think could have made me alter the laudable refolution I had taken, or to eafily fet afide the thoughts of revifiting and reviving two fuch dear and afflicted parents once more, after I was got fo far in the way to it; but this was not the only misfortune that attended this rafh and unnatural action, which rather proved the fatal' fource of new frenes of miferies and wickednefs.
The liberty that is commonly granted to foldiers to fwear, game, drink, whore, \&c. is very great among the Germans, and much more among the French; thefe laft may be jufly affirmed to be the moft profligate of any I ever have known or read of. There is no crime or lewdnefs they will not commit, no oaths or curfes fo terrible they will not delight in. They feem deftitute of all fenfe of religion and fhamefacednefs, and fo wholly carelefs about a future ftate, that I have feen many of them go to the gallows for defertion with as much unconcern, and fome of them with

## ( 161 )

with a feeming jocundity, as if they were mounting the guard; and not:one of them did I ever obferve to fhew the leaft fign or repentance, fear of death, or concern about another life. Thofe we had in this regiment were, if poffible, ftill worfe, being moftly. deferters from the French fervice, and to the laft degree profigate: and if there was any one among them that was more foberly or religioufly inclined, he was fure to , become the objeft of their fcorn and contempt, and to be baited like forme wicked or monftrous creature, a vaft number of which we had in this regiment; and thefe, coming to be intermixed with a number of raw young German recruits, taken fome from the plough and cart, others from their trades, and fome even from the Univerfities, did debauch them into all manner of wickednefs. This was the unhappy herd I was now got among, and whofe company and example compleated my ruin, by extinguinhing thofe few faint traces of religion I had left. I was indeed neither inclined to drinking nor gaming, and was not bardened enough in impudence to follow them in their lewdnefs; M

## ( 162 )

but was bad enough, neverthelefs, to indulge myfelf, in order to appear as vile and abandoned as they, in a fhameful habit of uttering fuch new and falhionable oaths, and monftrous curfes, as I had lately rather heard with horror, than learned, at Aix-la-Chapelle ; and as I was ftill as ambitious as ever to pafs for a Japonefe, chofe to profefs myfelf an unconverted or heathenifh one, rather than what I had then pretended to be, a convert to Chriftianity: My vanity foon made me begin to make an aukward jeft and ridicule of the moft folemn and facred truths of the Gofpel, and to take a brutifh delight at the furprize which the more fober people of the town I converfed with, expreffed at my blafphemous and prophane expreffions and objections; as well as in the pleafure I obferved this gave to my fellow-foldiers, or rather fellow-brutes.
As the former had obferved me to be, in all other refpects, a fober young fellow, given to no vice; and found me likewife mafter of fome fenfe and learning, they began to exprefs an uncommon compaffion for me, and, believing me a heathen indeed,
deed, propofed to me to enter the lifts with fome of their learned priefts or monks, who, they doubted not, would eafily convince me of my error and danger.; tho ${ }^{*}$ they themfelves had not been able to do it. It can hardly be doubted, but fuch a vain abandoned fellow as I was, would readily accept the offer. To have declined, would have betrayed a diffidence I was not capable of; fo that I pleafed myfelf with having a fair opportunity of difplaying my parts and learning againft my antagonifts, and either to ftand proof againft all their arguments, or yield myfelf convinced by them, according as I fhouild find it fuit beft with my vanity or intereft; for if I found it worth my while to chufe the latter, I thought I hould appear to the world as a convert of uncommon fize, and gain no fmall applaufe by it. There was but one thing could make me hefitate about it, viz. the horrid guilt I fhould plunge myfelf into by fuch a vile piece of hypocrify, and I own it made fome impreffion upon my mind; but it proved fhort-lived, and my own fanguine temper foon got the maftery of it, and I at length
confented to be introduced to a Capuchin of that city, who was efteemed a man of great piety as well as learning, and who had been apprifed before of the intended vift, and the purport of it.
When we came to the monaftery, we found the good old capuchin fitting on a bench, in an outward room of it, facing the gate, with a lufty young woman kneeling before him, barking like a dog, and making a great many other antick noifes and poftures; upon which I was told that fhe was poffeffed, and that the good father was exorcifing the evil fpirit out of her. Whether fhe was then fent for on purpofe, or came by accident, I know not; but I remembred to have feen her at fome proceffions, and once or twice at church, in the fame unaccountable attitudes; and, as I was then weak enough to think it a real poffeffion, from her extravagant actions and words, I began to fear, fo great is the power of guilt on fome occafions, that the devil might either expofe me for the vile part I'was. then acting, or perhaps do me fome other and worfe mifchief, as he had formerly done

## ( $16_{5}$ )

done to thofe vagabond exorcifts of whom we read Acts xix. 16. to avoid which I withdrew as foon as I decently could, as if to leave him to go on with his exortifm. Whether he took it in this fenfe or not, I know not ; but at our next meeting, when Ghe was out of the way, he took occafion. from thence to prove the truth of the, Chriftian religion in general, and of the church of Rome in particular ; and that her priefts alone have the power of cafting out devils. I told him, with a fmile, that it would be time enpugh to infift on the miracle, or enquire into the reality of it, when it was actually performed; to which he replied, with an air of great pity and ferioufnefs, that God did frequently permit fuch poor creatures to be tormented for fome time, before he vouchfafed them a deliverance; but that tho' exorcifms and prayers would not avail till then, yet they were obliged in charity to make ufe of them, in hopes that they would one time or other prove fuccefsful.
As we came to enter into other arguments, I found that the good old Capuchin was better provided for a controverfy againft

## ( 166 )

Protefants than againft heathens, which gave me no fmall advantage againft him ; and this I took with fuch an affuming air; and lightnefs of mind, that could not but be difpleafing to him; this was fo natural to me, that I never could forbear difplaying it upon all fuch occafions, and no wonder if it gave them great caufe to think me either not ferious enough for the momentoufnefs of the difpute, or perhaps rather that I was nothing lefs than what I pretended to be. I cannot indeed recollect, that any thing like this laft was their real judgment of me, from any thing that dropped from them, though it was but too vifible to be the cafe, if their charity did not blind their judgment in my favour; however, I could fee plainly enough from their uneafinefs, that they were not likely to be very forward in repeating our conferences, and I was vain enough to impute it to my being an overmatch for them in the difpute. And it was in the fame vain boafting ftrain, that I affirmed in that fabulous account I gave of myfelf in England, that I was difcharged out of that fervice for being a heathen, and

$$
\text { ( } 167 \text { ) }
$$

and for refufing to yield to the arguments of thofe who had attempted to convert me. The affumption was abfolutely falfe, and I was difcharged by order of the colonel, becaure I was not only below the ftandard, but alfo too tender for the fatigues of a foldier's life, And indeed I cannot exprefs the miferies we underwent in the fervice of that prince, who was then fo eminently poor, that great numbers of his troops .perihed for want of cloaths, fewel, and even of bread; and had I not been treated with greater care and tendernefs than moft of the reft were, mult inevitably have perifhed in a very hard winter at Bon, where, befides the want of all other neceffaries, the greateft part of the garrifon were quartered in barracks open to all winds and weather, and forced to lie on the bare boards.
Being thus happily difcharged from fodreadful a flavery, it was natural for me to think once more of returning to my long-wihed-for home, at any rate, and at all hazards; but here likewife my ill fate had laid an unexpected obftacle, which it was not in my power to remove; for my late M 4 . captain,

## ( 168 )

captain, a fordid wretch, who had been. raifed to his polt from that of a common centinel, by the bafeft means, had taken thofe cloaths I had brought from Aix-laChapelle under his care, and, as he pretended, to prevent my felling them, and fpending the money; but upon my being difcharged, refufed to reftore them to me, though be ftripped me of my ammunition. ones, and had the confcience to fend me away in the heart of a fevere winter, with a bare loofe old frock of blue linnen, and without waiftcoat or Mhoes to my feet, for thofe he gave me were fo worn out that my feet touched the ground, fo that I could never have travelled far before the hardnefs of the weather would have made an end of me. This made me refolve to go back to Cologn, and try how far my difmal plight and fluent tongue would work upon peoples charity; but it being then wartime, I was ftopped, as is ufual in garrifoned cities, at the gate, and conducted to the main guard, to give an account of myfelf to the officer then on duty. I did fo, and lighted on a perfon, who was really a gentleman; and took fuch liking

## ( 169 ):

to me, that I lifted myfelf in his company, and was prefently after fupplied with cloaths fitter for the reafon. I paffed to him for a Japonefe and a heathen, and was entered in his company under the name of Salmanazar, which, fince my coming into England, I altered, by the addition of a letter or two, to make it fomewhat different from that mentioned in the book of Kings, but whether my new captain believed what I told him or not, I became no fmall favourite of his. He was a man of good fenfe, fpoke Latin and French well, and had fome good fcholars in his company, one or twio of them of the church of Rome, whereas the regiment confifted moftly of Lutherans, it belonging to the duke of Mecklenburg, but was then in the Dutch pay, and garrifoned at Cologn.
That great city is, perhaps, one of the moft fuperftitious'in all Germany; every ftreet and every houfe hath the ftatue or image of fome faint or other, to which they light candles at night, but moftly to that of the Virgin Mary. Our Lutherans, in fpight of all prohibitions from the mam giftracy,

## - ( 170 )

giftracy, could not forbear rhewing their diflike and contempt to thefe, and many other fupertitious cuftoms they beheld, and were fometimes punifhed for it. , Yet did not this deter me from taking pride in outdoing them, though I was fo far from having the fame laudable pretence for it, that in my heart I condemned them for their untimely zeal, and myfelf for my impious vanity.: We had likewife feveral loofe gentlemen brought up in fome of the beft univerfities, who had been prevailed upon to exchange their gowns and books for a musket; fome of them were Proteftants, others Papifts, and with thefe our chief officers delighted to fet me on dif puting, by which I had gained their ill will fo far, as I generally proved too hard for them, that they had Itigmatized me with the titles of heathen, infidel unbaptized, and the like; but thefe, inftead of giving me any uneafinefs or remorfe, rather foothed my pride, and made me now and then, upon a proper occafion, take delight to remind them that I could give better reafons for my being fo, than they could for themfelves. My captaịn think-

## ( 17x )

ing that our chaplain, who had been brought up a regular clergyman in the Lutheran way, might fucceed better with me, propofed a conference to him ; but he being a balhful young gentleman, modeftly declined it, and contented himfelf with expofing the folly and abfurdity of the heathenifh religion in fome of his fermons, where he had a large field to expatiate on, without the danger of oppofition. I was afterwards introduced to two others $\boldsymbol{s}_{5}$, one who ferved the Lutheran meeting at Cologn (for they tolerate Proteftant meetings in time of war for the ufe of the garrifon, though they fhut them up in time of peace) and the other a man of great learning, at a fmall diftance from the city. Our difputes proved but of hhort duration, I always attacking them upon fuch points, as. I knew they were the leaft able to defend, but by Scripture, which I pretended not to believe, but urged eyen thofe very points, fuch as the Trinity, Confubfantiation, \&c. as arguments againft it; and this, as well as my vain and affuming behaviour, might eafily raife a diflike, if not
more likely, a miftruft of me. One thing I had occafion to obferve, that where Papifts and Proteftants are fo intermingled, their guides are better ftored with arguments againft each other, than againft the common enemies of the Chriftian faith.
Frem Cologn we were ordered into Hollan'd by the next fpring, and began to encamp as foon as the campaign began. The Lutherans and Calvinifts had prayers morning and night at the head of every regiment, and a fermon on Sundays, and I was vain enough to go from one to the other to obferve their method of devotion, and finging of pfalms and hymns, at which they both behaved with great ferioufnefs : but as for me, after liftening awhile to them, I was commonly driven by my rafhnefs and vanity to turn my back to them, and turning my face to the rifing or fetting fun, to make fome aukward fhew of worhip, or praying to it, and was no lefs pleafed to be taken notice of for fo. doing. This vain fit grew up to fuch a height, that I made me a little book with figures of the fun, moon and ftars,

## ( 173 )

and fuch other imagery as my phrenfy fuggefted to me, and filled the reft with a kind of gibberih profe and verfe, written in my invented character, and which I muttered or chanted as often as the humour took me.
I have often juftly wondered at the fingular goodnefs of God to fuch a vile ahandoned wretch as I was become by this time, that in neither regiment, in which I had continued, as I remember, about two years, during which a harp and fevere war was carried on with equal fiercenefs, it never was my lot to be commanded to a fiege, battle, party, kirmih, or place of danger, in which I might have been fuddenly cut off in the midft of a moft impious career ; or, what is equally furprifing, that the apprehenfion of fo dreadful an end, fhould not have deterred me from fo fenfelefs and wicked a courfe, and made me feel the monftrous ftupidity of running fuch defperate hazards of body and foul, for the fake of a little popular admiration at the beft; but, inftead of which, I have more frequently met with mortification and contempt. But I was

## ( 174 )

ftill very young, to the beft of my'remembrance not above eighteen, if 'quite fo much; my mind mifguided by a wrong education, as I have before obferved; confcious of my own want of any real merit, and yet fond to excefs for any kind of pretence to it ; and fo defirous of being admired and taken notice of, that, rather than have foregone that favourite paffion, I would have chofen to indulge it, I verily believe at that time, at the hazard and expence of being looked upon as the very vileft fellow that ever lived. As for thofe impreffions of religion which I had fo Atrongly imbibed in my youth, they gradually loft their influence in proportion to my giving way to that deftructive parfion, and, at the beft, were more in my head than in my heart, till it pleafed the divine grace to tranfplant them thither, as the propereft foil for their fructifying; but this bleffing did not come down to me till after feveral years, and a variety of fcenes of impiety and guilt. I fhall pafs by the other occurrences of my foldier's life, to come to that fatal one which proved the fource

## ( 175 )

fource of new and more horrid offences againt God and man.
The laft garrifon I came to was at Sluys, where was a French and a Scotch regiment in the Dutch pay. There I foon became acquainted with feveral of the French officers, whofe language I perfectly underftood; but as I was wholly unacquainted with the Scotch and Englifh, and few of them could fpeak Latin, I could not be fo converfant with them. I found moft of thofe French gentlemen very fuperficial, and did not a little indulge my vanity in ridiculing their tenets, whether they were Papifts or Proteftants, for there was a mixture of them, and had occafion to obferve (tho' to my fhame, had I had the leaft fenfe of the vile part I played) that, tho' the greater number of them were given to fuch flagrant vices as are but too common among gentlemen of that profeffion; yet they all appeared fo firmly attached to the tenets of their particular churches, that -. they expreffed much more uneafinefs at thofe farcafms 1 ufed to throw out, than they did at the moft dreadful oaths they commonly fwore, or any vices that reigned
reigned among them. And as I fill kept myrelf untainted from the latter, and had long ago broke myfelf of that horrid one of fwearing, which I had taken up on my firft entrance into the foldier's life (not fo much indeed out of a principle of religion, as from an ambition I had of paffing for a moral heathen) I frequently ufed to obferve to them the unreafonablenefs of their untimely zeal, which : made them fo readily condemn me for what they called my irreligious farcafins, which yet were but agreeable to my notions and belief, whilft they indulged themfelves in vices, fuch as duelling, wenching, fwearing, and drinking, which were not only incompatible with theirs, but fuch as, bad as they thought me, I could not on any confideration be guilty of. Thefe kinds of fevere rebukes ought, I fay, to have filled me with the deepeft fenfe of my own more vile and abominable inconfiftency; but as that did not fo openly appear, the applaufes I received from the fober part, and, even from fome of the minifters, for fo ftrenuounly pleading the caufe of virtue, made me quite blind to my more odious

## ( 177 )

odious vices; fo that as loing as the chia- - : racter or fhadow of moral virtue procured me fo much regard and efteem, I never troubled myfelf about the want of the real fubftance.
Brigadier Lauder, a Scottifh gentleman, well refpected, and colonel of a regiment in that garififon, was then governor, and, unhappily for me, conceived a curiofity of feeing me at his own houre, where were affembled feveral officers, befides the miniter of the French church, and Mr. Innes; chaplain to the Scotifh regiment; and after dinner I was admitted to haye a kind of conference with them. I own, indeed, that the account I gave of it in that publifhed romance of mine, was far enough from candid or impartial, with refpect to the French minifter, who was the chief manager in the difpute, my ufual vanity having made me relate it too much to his difadvantage, and Mr. Innes, between whom and that gentleman there .. was a great mifunderftanding, added fome other particulars, equally mifreprefented and mortifying ; but, abating that, the reft is the trueft part I can call to mind in that $\mathbf{N}$. forged

## ( 178 )

forged narrative of myrelf. However, Mr. Innes, fince dubbed doctor by one of the Scotch Univerfities, and a near relation to the governor; would not lofe fo fair an opportunity of triumphing over his rival, and finding that I had nonpluffed him at almoft every argument, but more particularly againft that of abfolute predeftination, took occafion to inform me that it was a doctrineras much condemned by fome, as it was frenuoully afferted by other churches, and that confequently Chrifianity; he would undertake to prove, was not to be charged with it. He had a much fmoother and lefs overbearing way of fpeaking than the other gentleman, and kindly invited me to his lodgings, where we might, at our leifure, difcurs that or any other points in difpute, not doubting but a perfon of my fenfe, learning, and feeming candor (as he was pleafed to compliment my vanity) would eafily yield to conviction, when the point was once cleared to my fatisfaction, as he did not doubt he fhould fhortly do.
I readily accepted of his invitation, by which I found he defigned to exclude the French

## ( 179 )

French minifter from having any thare in our future conferences, but did not then furpect his farther drift, which was, if he could, at any rate, or by any means, make a convert of me, to recommend himfelf to the then worthy bifhop of London, a perfon, he knew, of fuch fingular candor, as not to be over fufpicious, and too generous not to encourage what he thought a charitable, worthy attion; fo that, as I eafily found afterwards, the hopes of procuring fome preferment to himfelf, rather than any regard or concern for me, was the main fpring of all his pretended zeal for my converfion. I am forry that I fhall be obliged, in the fequel, to relate feveral very harfh truths concerning his behaviour on this fcandalous occafion, though I will be ftill careful to mention no more of it than is barely neceflary to fet the matter in a true light, and rather conceal than expofe fuch parts of it, as have not an immediate relation to the fubject I am upion; much lefs will I go about to aggravate bis faults, in order to extenuate my own. If he fhould be fill alive when thefe memoirs hall be publifhed, $\mathrm{N}_{2}, \quad$, it

## ( 180 )

will not be the firft thing that has been publifhed with truth and juftice to his difadvantage, and may all. contribute to infpire him with a true remorfe and fincere repentance: if dead, it can neither hurt him, nor any that belong to him *: He

- The doctor is long fince dead, and, I am forry to fay, hath left 2 character behind him that reflects no great credit to his cloth, and may eaffly, among thofe that knew him, jultify what I have already faid, and thall be farther obliged to mention in the feguel; he was not many years older than I when I firft came acquainted with him, and I foon perceived himi to be a man of no fmall ambition, though he was fo far from having any of the generous difpofition which is monly known to accompany it, that he was no lefs a flave to avarice: witnefs his arrogating to himfelf the credit as well as advantage of that excellent treatife, intituled, A Modef Enquiry after Moral Virtue; for which he obtained from the prefent binhop of London a very good living in Efiex; but which the real and worthy author, a poor epifcopal clergyman in Scotland, fince obliged him publickly to difown and difclaim in print, as well as to compromife wish him for the profit of the edition. This, together with his malverfation in fundry refpects in the parifh of St. Margaret, Weftmintter, fill frefh in people's memory, obliged him to retire to h's new living, where, I am told, he lived very private, and, I hope, made the beft ufe of his solitude. As therefore he had long ago loft his character among all that knew him, or had heard of his mameful actions, I thought myfelf lefs obliged to treat it with that tendernefs that I fhould have done, had he taken more care to conceal his vile actions from the world.


## ( 18 I ).

was, howwever, intent upjon his purfuit; and fo affiduous in fending for me, that fome of the Dutch minitters thought fit likewife to do the fame, and more particularly, as I found afterwards, to reconcile me to their favourite article of predeftination, by expounding: it to me according to what they call the infralapfarian fyftem, which is indeed lefs dreadful and antifcriptural; but Mr. Innes éafily diffuaded me from going amongit them, that he might have me wholly to himfelf, and feldom failed at our parting to clap a fmall piece of Dutch filver into my hand, which proved an effectual bait to me, who was ftill fo bad:an ceconomift of my poor foldier's pay; and then wanted feveral neceffaries, with which this fupplied me. By this time I began not to be a little tired with'a foldier's life, the 'place was very cold and bleak, the duty hard, and the pay fo fmall, - that even they who could make the moft of it, could but juft make ghift to live on the plaineft things; fo that all things confidered, there was no likelihood I fhould make any long oppofition to his arguments, efpecially as he took care to

## ( 182.)

back them with very large promifes of getting my diẹcharge, and bringing me into England, where he made me hope to meet, with the greateft encouragement; and I own that the profpect of fuch a change of life made fo great an impreffion upon me, that he rather found me more forward to anfwer his defign than was confiftent with prudence, and too ready to be wholly directed by him: As foon as I had given him this affurance, he wrote a long letter to the bifhop of London, wherein he told me he had faid fo many things in my favour, that he doubted not of my foon being fent for by, and meeting with the kindeft reception from him. However, the wihed-for anfwer not coming till fix or feven weeks afterwards, gave me an opportunity of feeing farther into his temper, than I had been able to do; his meffages to me were gradually lefs frequent, our interviews more cold, as well as our parting, when he likewife with-held his hand from making me the ufual prefents. This latter I indeed fuppofed might be owing to his calh running lower than ufual; but I have feen fo many infances

## (. 183 )

inftances of his nigardnefs, that I have more reafon to impute it to that, and partly to his defpairing of the fuccefs. of his letter; for whilf he was in bopes. of it, he had taken care to introduce me to fome learned gentlemen, minifters and others; under pretence of examining whe-ther I was capable of giving a fatisfactory aecoust of my pretended converfion, and had obtained from fome of them èery advantageous cértificates in my favour, which he took no frall pride to thew to the brigadier and to his other acquaintance; but upon the unexpected delay of the anfiver, he behaved with more coldnefs and indifference, till a jealous thoüght farted in his mind, left that fhould encourage fome of thefe minitters, who had expreffed themfelves in my favour, to take the bufineefs out of his hand, and rob him of the credit of his new convert. This fufpicion made hini all at once alter his behaviour, and refolve to baptize me with fuch hafte and fa little warning, that my furprize gave me no time to confider what an abominable piece of irreligion I had engaged myfelf in, though I muft confefs,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{N}_{4} \tag{to}
\end{equation*}
$$

## ( 184 )

to my fhame; that: had he given me more time to think upon it, yet I have but too much reafon to think, his fair promifes and delufive profpects would eafily have Ifwallowed up all my fcruples and reluctance, upon his firt renewal of them.
This, and fome other parts of his behaviour, had already convinced me that a charitable defign of converting a foul was the fartheft from his thoughts, and that he was fo far from believing me to be what I pretended, that he had fome time before taken a moft effectual, way to convince himfelf of the contrary, beyond all poffibility of doubting. His fratagém, if I may fo call it, was to make me trannlate - a paffage in Cicero de naturâ deorum, of fome length; into my (pretended) Formofan language, and give it to him in writing; and this I eafily did, by means, of that unhappy readinefs I had at inventing of characters, languages, \&c. But, after he had made me confrue it, and defired me to write anothet verfion of it on:-another paper, his propofal, and the manner of his exatting it, threw me into fuch vifible confufion, having had fo little time

## (. 185 )

- time to excogitate the firft, and lefs to commit it to memory, that there were not above one half of the words in the fecond that were in the firlt. His defiring me to conftrue this likewife, cguluted inte tilt $\rightarrow$ more; efpecially, when he fhewed me the palpable difference. The ferious air he affumed upon it, made me expect nothing elfe than a total rupture, and his expofing the impoiture in the manner I was confcious it deferved. I was however agreeably: (and; to my mame, I ought to add) deceived; and he finding, by this uinexpected trial, what a memory and readinefs I had, and how qualified I was to carry on fuch a cheat, began to clear his brow, and calm the diforder he had thrown me into, by a more chearful and friendly look; but did not forget, at the fame time, to give me to underftand, tho' at a great diftance, that I ought to take care to be better provided for the future. I promifed to take his advice, and did fo in part; büt was become too indolent to go thro' the fatigue of forming a whole language, at leaft till I was convinced that it would ftand me in fome ftead; though, by what I have tried fince


## ( 186 )

fince I came into England, I cannot fay but I could have compaffed it with lefs difficulty thàr can be conceived, had I been capable of applying clofely to it. However, his feeming regard for me, at leaft till the delay of the bifhop's anfwer, which made him furpend it for ten or twelve days, gave me but too much reafon to think, that he had not one jot more of confcience or religion than I, tho' olter, and a learned divine, fince he made no feruple not only to join in, but to encourage and purfue fa vile a cheat. But if he had no more religion, he had at leaft more worldly prudence than I , in that he laid the foundar tion for fome confiderable preferment for himfelf; whilf I, like the ftupid abandondoned wretch I had been hitherto, looked no farther than a little vain fatisfaction \& $c$ the prefent, or, at moft, a deliverance from the foldier's life. For by that time I could fee 'fo far thro' all his artifices, and different behaviours, that I did not much depend on any of his other promifes. And he foon after gave me caufe to think myfelf not miftaken in him. For when, upon

## ( 187 )

his bringing me into England, he got himfelf into the poit of chaplain-general of the. Englifh forces in Portugal, by the intereft of the good biho'p Compton, he not left me to fift for mytrits and to bear the brunt of all objections, but was guilty of fuch other vile actions, as eafily convinced me that he was a more real convert to Spinozifm, than I was to him; for I obferved him often reading that author's pofthumous works, tho' he was an utter ftranger to his fober way of living. I had likewife a greater opinion of his parts and learning; than $I$ have fince found caufe for, which made me conclude, that I had no reafon to be more fcrupulous than he, and this in a great meafure quelled all my flight and tranfitory qualms, at leaft till it came to the folemn pufh:
I bave already hinted, that his fear of being fupplanted by fome other minifter', made him refolve to haften the impious ceremony, for fo I thought it,", whatever he did; but of this he had apprifed me only in general terms; and without fixing any. time for it, or mentioning how he defigned to perform $\mathrm{it}_{\mathrm{i}}$; probably that I might think

## ( 188 )

think the lefs upon it: Accordingly fome days prffed without my feeing him, or at leaft hearing any thing about it, when one afternoon he fent his man to my lodgings, to acquant hat he had fixed that evening about fix of the clock for it, and to defire me to be ready againft the time. - As I had hardly three hours to confider of it, one may eafily imagine the furprife and hurry, the confufion and dread, it threw me into; and, indeed, I was fo divided between the fear of bringing upan myfelf fome heavy judgment for fo impious a prophanation of that divine inflitution, and the thoughts, if. I fubmitted to it, of behaving with fome proper decency yunder all thofe tumults with which my mind was then agitated, that I began to wifh I might have refolution enough to avoid it, when the dreaded time was come. .But that not only failed me, when I faw the governor and feveral other officers and gentlemen going to the chapel, where the mock ceremony was to be difpatched; but the devil, I believe, did then find a way of salming my confcience for the prefent, by putting it into my head that it being to be performed

## ( 189 )

formed by a heretic, for fuch I then judged, if not all the Proteftant minifters, at leaft fuch a one as $I$ now knew my ungodly guide to be, it could be indeed io facrament, nor a repetiofiof it. And this confufed diftinction I then called to mind from what I had learned at the fchools, tho' I was far enough from being fatisfied that it was right. What falvo he had for himfelf, I can only guefs; but, as far as I could perceive, he went thro' the ceremony with a very compofed countenance and prefence of mind, and feeming devotion ; and tho' he only had his Englifh common-prayer book before him, yet he read the office all in a good Latin off-hand, as the faying is, and without any hefitation or folecifm, as thofe obferved who heard him with greater attention than I was then capable of. For tho' I was a perfect mafter of the Latin, and he pronounced it, as moft of his countrymen do, in a very intelligible manner; yet fuch was my confufion and hurry of fpirits, that I fcarcely knew or could mind one word he faid. And a much greater one, I dare affirm, I fhould have been in; had I been either

$$
(190)
$$

either able to attend to the folemnity of the office, or had been made acquainted with it before., But I was an utter Atranger to giery part of it; and it is my opinion, that he chore I thoud be fo, for he never once thewed, much lefs explained, the leaft part of it in any of the meetings I gave him at his lodgings. All I could recollect of the whole, was that I kept up fo much prefence of mind, as to appear demure and ferious all the while, which I thought very long, and that I was very glad when it was over, and much more fo that my abominable hypocrify had not been detected, or rather punifhed, by fome fevere judgment.
The name he gave me was that of George Lauder, which was that of the governor; whom he had prevailed upon to paifs for my godfather; and it was accordingly entered into the mufter-roll, inftead of that of Salmanazar, which I had till then anfwered to. This new name and furname, joined to fome congratulations then given me, and a prefent of a piftole from the governor, made me, for fome time, forget the heavy guilt I had plunged myfelf
. into.

## ( 191)

into. But this calm proved but fhort, and the delay of the bifhop's anfwer, and much more Mr. Innes's coldnefs: and indifference, after he had once: made fure of me, foon brought mextrepent of my wicked compliance, as I then judged it, though not fo much from a fenfe of religion, as becaufe I did not look upon my vanity and ambition fufficiently recompenfed for the atrocious guilt I had contracted ; and this the reader will the better judge by what follows.
The long expected letter came at length ; it was full of commendations to Mr . Innes for his zeal, befides a very kind invitation to me from that worthy prelate, to come over into England. I was by that time fo, weary of a foldier's life, that I hould have readily come upon a lefs promifing profpect than that which he now began again to feed my fanguine hopes with. Some things he talked to me quite inconfiftent with what, as I before hinted, : he knew of me, and which of courfe could be no temptations to me, unlefs I was bafe enough to add ftill more weight to my guilt; of this kind in particular was what he

## ( 192 )

he mentioned to me of a defign of fending me to Oxford, to teach the Formofan language to a fet of gentlemen, who were afterwards to go with me to convert thofe people to Cenmidnity, which, if he believed any thing of, he muft needs depend upon my inventing fuch a language, and involving myfelf in ftill deeper guilt; and yet I own, to my fhame', though I knew not with what view he could mention fuch a propofal, nor looked upon it but with dread, yet I could not forbear being much elevated with it, though I was fill in hopes that I might find fome pretence for fetting it afide, and being made ufeful there in fome other and more fuitable way. How I might have behaved in fuch a cafe I know not, only I have reafon to queftion whether I fliould have had integrity and refolution to have confeffed the truth, rather than to have involved myfelf in a ftill more Chameful impofture; but, as I obferved before, I knew him too well to rely on any of his fluent and difingenuous promifes.

## ( 193 )

The governor, at his requeft, got me difcharged, or rather gave my captain another man in my room, 'whilf Mr. Innes took care to procure a certificate figned by that gentleman and a number of other $\because$ officers of the garrifon, and evep by feveral minifters, much more in my commendation than I'could poffibly deferve; after which, having got all things in order for our departure, we fet out for Rotterdam, where he introduced me to fome perfons of confideration for piety and learning, particularly the celebrated Mr. Bafnage, author of the Continuation of the Jewifh Hiftory, and likewife to fome of the minifters and gentlemen of the Englin church, and to fome of the French Proteftants there; among whom I was fo much careffed; that I begun to look upon myfelf in a very agreeable and advantageous light. There were, however, two things that mortified me not a little, viz. the mean appearance I made in fome caftoff cloaths, with which Mr. Innes had fupplied me upon my leaving off my regimental ones, but which were both too big and too long for me, and the fhrewd quef-

## ( 194 )

tions put to me by feveral gentlemen; which convinced me that they did not give all tho credit I could have wified, to the account I gave of myfelf and country. For as to any real remorfe or concern for the fhameful part I was acting, I found it fit lighter on my mind; in proportion to the many things I met with that flattered my vanity. The more effectually therefore to remove thefe two obflacles to it, I fell upon one of. the mof whimfical expedients that could come into a crazed brain, viz. that of living upon raw flefh, roots and herbs; and it is furprifing how foon I habituated myfelf to this new, and, till now, frange food , without receiving the leaft pre judice in my health; but I was bleffed with a good conflitution, and I took care to ufe a good deal of pepper, or othes fpices, for a concocter, whilft my vanity, and the people's furprize at my diet, ferved me for a relinhing fauce.
We embarked at the Brill for England in the packet-boat, and in our paffage had fuch a dreadful form, that as many paffengers, and among them Mr. Innes, got into the long boat, as it could well contain.

## ( 195 )

tain. They all fhewed an uncommon dread in their looks, whillt I , who ftaid behind; beheld them with a kind of futpid unconcerin, rather than a generous pity; every moment in danger of meeting with that dreadful end they had endeavoured to avoid; yet, terrible as the fight was, it hardly raifed in me one ferious refolution againft the more dangerous defign I was unhappily embarked in, or the more dreadful hipwreck I had expofed myfelf to, that of the foul; or if any fuch thoughts came then into my mind, they were foon difpelled at our landing at Harwich, and at the pleafing profpect with which Mr. Innes had flattered. my ambition and vanity. At my arrival at London, Mr. Innes, and fome worthy clergymen of his acquaintance, introduced me to the bihop of London, by whom I was received with great humanity, and got foon after a good number of friends among the clergy and laity, mof of them perfons of piety and - worth. But I bad a much greater number of oppofers to combat with, who put me under a neceffity of having my fenfes and memory about me more than ever, to avoid

## ( 196 )

a fatal detection; for I had been fo negligeist, notwithftanding Mr. lnnes's caution of bejng prepared, againft exigencies, wit". a language and a prudent readinels at reading and writing my new invented character, that had I been attacked on that fide, I muft have been infallibly foiled; but they took a contrary way, and though they judged rightly of me in the main, yet I can fafely affirm, that they have been very far from being candid, or even juft in the account of the difcoveries they pretended to have made to my difadvantage; partid cularly Drs. Halley, Mead and Woodward, and as I had then feveral zealous patrons of great candor and integrity; who made it their bufinefs to fearch into the botions of thofe reports, they found fo much fophiftry and difingenuity in them, that 1 cannot but obferve here, that the too vifid ble eagernels of there gentlemen to expofe me, at any rate, for a cheat, ferved only to make the more ferious and candid part think' the 'better of me, and to looks upon me as' a kind of confeffor, efpecially as the three gentlemen abovementioned, but more particularly the firft, were known

## ( 197 )

to be no great admirers of the Chriftian revelation, to which my patrons thought I had given fo ample a teftimiony. My complexion, indeed, which, was very fair, appeared an unanfwerable objection againtt me; there being but few fuch to be met with in thofe hot climates, efpeci+ ally that of. Formofa; which lies under th's tropic; but. by the help of what I had read or heard: of fome of thofe countries, I foon i hatehed a lucky diftinction between thafe whofe bulinefs expofes them to the heat! of ithe fun ${ }_{2}$ and thore who keep altogether at home; in cool thades, or apartmients wider ground; and fcarce ever feel the leaft degtee of the reigning heat. And this, diftinction indeed is not only very: reafonable; ; but was afterwards confirmed by: perfons of candor and ext perience, Whe:bad beenin thofe countries, and affirmed that they had feem, perfons as fair as any northern : Europeans, tho' not in fo great a pumber, that lived under the rays of a vertical fup.
On the other hand; my oppofers were as much at a lofs how to find out my real country, either by my idiom, or my pro-
$(198)$
nunciation of the Latin; French, Italian, or any other language I was mafter of. For though this may appear an eafy thing to be done, by thofe who are acquainted with the European languages, and the different pronunciations peculiar to every nation, yet both my idiom and pronunciation were fo mixed and blended, and I may fay defignedly fo, by the many lant guages I had learned, and nations I had been converfant with, that it was impoffible for the mof curious judge to difcover in it any thing like an uniform likenefs to any other European one they knew of. Dr. Mead, indeed, took upon him to be very pofitive from both, that I was of either German or Dutch extratt; he could not have pitched upon a: more unikely one, feeing the Dutch idiom and lañuage were the only one I was the leaft acquainted with, and accordingly fome of my friends, who were better: judges of fuch matters; and could plainly fee that mine was more oppofite to them than to any other, did freely cenfure him for it,: and tell him he might as well have affirmed me to be an Ethiopian from my complexion, as a Ger-

## ( 199.)

man from my pronunciation. But the truth was, I knew enough of all of them to blend my difcourfe more or lefs with any of them, 'as either to put people upon the wrong fcent, whilft I kept every one from getting into the right one; for I can fafely fay that I never met with; nor heard of any one, that ever guefied right, ar any thing near it, with refpect to my native country.
I might here add feveral vifible advantages which my friends might juftly take in. my defence, and among them á great number of fcandalous falhoods difperfed abroad from what quarter I know not, of which thofe, who were better acquainted with me, knew me to be wholly innocent, as .well as crimes. I was naturally averfe to fuch as drinking, gaming, \&xc. for, bating my vain-glorious foible, which, though I could not overcome, I took fuch care to conceal from them by the mot oppofite behavi-

- our, my converfation was fuch as the moft cenforious could not have blamed, but which my friends highly admired in me. The plainnefs of my drefs and diet, $\mathrm{O}_{4}$ the


## (. 200 )

the little trouble I. gave myfelf about worldly wealth, preferment, or even ac-, quiring or fecuring a bare competencys, a? good-natured and charitable difpofition, vifibly natural to me, my averfenefs to drinking, lewd women, \&c. and a great refervednefs to fuch of the fair fex as had either loft their reputation, though they lived fill in credit and fplendor, and even to thofe who betrayed too fmall a regard for their character, the converfation of whom I profeffedly avoided, though againft my own intereft, not indeed fo much from a principle of virtue, as an affectation of it; thefe, together with the warmth I naturally expreffed for religion, and the real delight I took in the public offices of it, appeared fuch convincing proofs of my fincerity, that thofe of $m y$ friends, to whom I was moft intimately known; were the mof impatient, and difleafed to have it called in queftion; for who could imagine, as they often urged, that a youth of fo much fenfe and learning for his years, fo feemingly free from ambition and other vices, could be abandoned enough to be guilty of fuch abominable
nable an impofture and impiety, for the fake of a little plain, homely food and rayment, beyond which he neither makes the leart effort, or feems to have the leait wifh.
I am aware that what I have faid in the laft paragraph, will fo far carry the face of my once favourite vanity, that it will be cenfured by feveral of my readers as a rank piece of oftentation, rather than a fincere acknowledgment of my guilt; tho' a more candid one, who joins both parts of it together, will rather fee, that the difplay of the one, is only'the greater aggravation of the other. ': But as neither was the motive of what I have there faid, but rather to do jultice to thofe friends of mine who fo
b kindly took my part on that account, I had much rather undergo cenfure againft myfelf, than to have omitted any thing that 'can vindicate their character;' and convince the world that the zeal they expreffed for me, was really the effect of $a^{\prime}$ moft candid and charitable conftruction on a life fo feemingly innocent and difinterefted, and not owing to any rafh or blind prepoffeffion, or to an unreafonable

## (202)

oppofition againft my cenfurers, much lefs. to difhoneft connivance with any views or defigns of mine; when I am very fure, that if they had had any well-grounded fufpicion of my being what I was, an impottor; they would have been the firt who would not only have expofed me to the world, but would have become my moft irreconcileable enemies. And I thought myfelf the more obliged, in juftice as well as gratitude, to fay thus much in their vindication; becaufe fome of them, men of probity and learning, undertook to be my advocates in print; and not only complained of thofe afper? fions fo freely and unjufly caft upon me, but even challenged $m y$ accurers, in feveral advertifements.publifhed in the LondonGazzette, to prove any of them againf me, or to produce any one folid proof or objection againft the account I had given of myfelf. Notwithtanding, which charitable efforts on my behalf, and the candid vindication they printed fome montlos after, both they and I had the mortification to find (and I have had fince great reafon to blefs God for it) that my fabulous
(203)
lous account was as much diferedited by the greateft part of the world as ever; which .proved an effectual means, in time, to bring me, thro' his mercy, to a deeper fenfe of my folly and impiety, than I could have been, if that had gained a more general credit.
There was likewife a variety of judgments formed about me, by thofe who thought me a cheat. Thofe of the church of Rome believed I was bribed to that impofture by fome Englifh minifters, on purpofe to expofe their church. The Proteftants in Holland were much of the fame mind; but added, that I-was farther hired to explode their doctrine of predeftination, and cry up the epifcopacy of the church of England, in derogation of their Prefbyterian government. Here fome reprefented me as a jefuit or.prieft in difguife, others as a tool of the nonjurors, becaufe Mr. Innes had introduced me among a fet of them, particularly the "famed ${ }^{\text {Mr. Lelley, of }}$ whofe writings, as well as inftructive and facetious company, I was very fond; and I may add, that their converfation had not a little biaffed me to their principles, efpecially

## ( 204 )

efpecially as I found them fo conformable to the fchool divinity I had learned beyond fea, tho it never affected me fo far: as to go to any of their meetings. However, the reader may fee, by what I have faid hitherto, that all thefe various opinions were but random fhots, and without any foundation. And indeed my cafe was fo intricate and perplexing, that it was next to impoffible for the ableft heads to have gueffed what my motives were, or for what, or by whom; I was induced thus toimpofe upon mankind. And I am fully perfuaded, that my being wholly innocent of any fuch vile defigns, either 'againft the church or ftate, or of being employed by the enemies of either, was the caufe of my difappointment turning fo much to my advantage, which might otherwife have been attended with a more fatal and fhameful cataftrophe; and that the merciful judge of all hearts, knowing mial to be actuated only by mere youthful fully and vanity, without any other dangerous or guilty defign, than the indulging a wild and phrantic paffion (which 'was g:own too powerful for me to refift, with that

- little


## ( 205 )

little Chare of reafon and experience 1 was then mafter of, and with thefe. difadvant--ages and temptations I laboured under) did, in his great pity, prevent iny going on and perifing under fuch a load of unrepented guilt, and I accordingly defire to be ever thankful for that great and undea ferved inftance of his divine mercy and goodnefs. And, next to my humble ac $\rightarrow$ knowledgment of it, I do think myfelf bound to declare thus folemnly, that $\mathbb{k}$ never was fet upon, nor directly or indisectly inticed, by any fet of men for any private ends, to att the part I did, except what I have lately related of Mr. Innes's encouragements and promifes to me, in which I am very well fatisfied he had no other ends to ferve, but that of his own private intereft and advancement.
I am far enough however from reffecting upon, or bearing any refentment againft thise who looked upon me as a tool of fome defigning fet of men, engaged in Come private defign. It was not natural to fuppofe that fuch a young, and; in all appearance, as well as reality, raw and unexperienced fellow, could of his own

## ( 206 )

head have imbarked in fuch an impor. ture, and carried it on fo long, and with fuch boldnefs and fuccefs, as to have pro-cured to himfelf fo many zealous patrons among men of character for learning and probity, unlefs he had been privately fet upon, inftructed, and fupported in it, by fome defigning perfons of more years, difcretion, and abilities, tho from what quarter was not eafy to guefs, either from my béhaviour, writings, or any view they could perceive me in purfuit of. As for thofe who took me for a jefuit, prieft, or emiffary from Rome, they were certainly the wideft from the mark. : The gentlemen of that church were always my moft ftrenuous oppofers, and not without caufe, as they could be very fure that whatever defign or errand I might be embarked in, it could not be in favour of it; and had my fabulous account met with that credit which it muft be fuppofed was expected, it muft have done their caufe. more differvice than any private defign a might carry on could have done good. Befides, it was vifible I thunned their company as m- $x^{-2}$ as poffible, tho' my motive for it,

## ( 207 )

the confcioufnefs of my own guilt, was not fo apparent. I never converfed with any of them, but in the jarring and controverfial way; and, tho' at that time much againft my confcience, was a ftrenuous oppofer of their particular doctrines, both in converfation and writing. I never once entered into any of their chapels; (nor have fince, all the time I have been in England) neither did I thew the leaft favour or partiality towards them: This was indeed rather looked upon as an artifice, faid to. be very ufual and common amongit them, it being urged as an obfervation of a long ftanding, that thofe difguifed emiffaries'affected to appear the moft putrageous enemies of that caufe they were privately carrying on. Whether the fact be true or not I I can only fay, that I never knew of any fuch but by hearfay ; neither am I any farther concerned about it, than to fay, that I was the fartheit from being one of that fort; and that whatever $\dagger$ nave faid or written againft that church, was only with a view of gaining credit to myfelf, without any view of ferving or hurting it, or indeed caring which of the
two was likely to be the refult. For tho' all the arguments I had heard or read againft it, and in which I was not a little verfed, had not yet been able to wipe off the prejudices of my education, which I had imbibed under the jefuits and dominicans, of its being, if not the only faving church as they affirm it to be, yet, at leaft, of its not being fo bad and corrupt,. fo dangerous and damnable a one as fome Proteftants, with more zeal than charity, have reprefented it, under the odious titles of Anti-chrift, whore of Babylon, \&xc: neverthelefs, my youth and inconfiderate vanity would not fuffer me to enquire whether or no, or how far, I incurred a guilt in my oppofing and expofing it.
It was likewife from the fame fhameful motive of vanity that I pretended, from my own knowledge, not only to confirm butaggravatethe black accountwhichauthors had publifhed againft: the jefuits and oher miffionaries, efpecially with regard to their boafted converfions and fuccefs in the Eat Indies, and more particularly concerning the caufe of the perfecution raifed againft the Chriftians in Japan; when all that I is knew

## ( 209 )

knew of it was only from reading or hear-fay. And as to the Jefuits, though $\mathbf{I}$ was then and am fill fenfible that fome of their maxims, tenets, and policies,' do jufly deferve to be condemned; yet I was far enough from having fuch difadvantageous' notions of that fociety, as the world feems generaily to have of it , and much lefs from any thing I hadje ever obferved among them, confidering: how young I was when I left them, and how clofe and reclure they keep themfelves from the reft of the world. But whether they deferve the difadvantageous character they bave, or not, which is beft known to hins, to whom both they and in pery man is to give an account at the laft great day, it is incumbent upon me thus far to do them juftice, as to own; that thofe reflexions 1 have caft upon their miffioinaries in China and $J$ pan, had no other foundation than common report, withut any enquiry whether that was traty or falfo; fo far was I from baving any jult or real reafon for confirming or aggravating it. As for the reft of the priefts of that church, as far as I was capable of
judging of them, in thofe juvenile days in which I was more intimately converfant with feveral of them, I can only fay, with the common voice, that there are good and bad among them, though perhaps to a much bigher degree than I have had occafion to obferve of thofe of any other church. One thing I can truly fay, however, to their praife, that they generally take greater care to inftruct their youth in matters of religion, and to oblige them all to affift at their catechetical lec.tures on Sundays in the afternoon. The misfortune was, that we had no books to learn them by heart beforehand, but the prieft was forced by repetitions to inculcate them in our, memories; whence it followed, that thofe who were wanting. either in attention or memory, went away little the better for the pains he took with them., As for me, I never failed coming, becaufe my memory being yery tenacious, and my apprehenfions pery quick, I could carry an anfwer of aly length at once or twice repeating, $f_{c}$, hat I was moftly the firft interrogated, and received no fmall commendations from our; infructors,

## ( 211 )

infructors, efpecially as I was one of the youngeft, and was as ready at thofe anfwers on the next meeting, as if I had thought on nothing elfe all that time. And as this ufed to make me to be much admired by the numerous audience, fo it of courfe failed not to feed me with fecret pride, and a natural fondnefs for all fuch occafions of hewing my talents. The fame happened to me on my coming firf into England, when Dr. Innes, proud of his pretended profelyte, introduced me into the company of all the learned divines of his acquaintance, that they might hear me defcant on the grounds of my converfion; and I was by that time fo fell verfed in that kind of learning, more from the books I occafionally read on that fubject, than from any pains he had taken to infruct me, that I believe few people of my years, notwithfanding I had murdered fo much of my time, could have fairn nore in defence of the Chriftian re$1 \mathrm{~B}^{\circ} \mathrm{N}$ n ; all which was fufficiently acknowl.dged with no fmall commendations and congratulations, both by all that heard me, and by thofe who have firlt read thefe arc. $\mathrm{P}_{2}$ guments

## ( 212 )

guments in the fictitious book abovementioned; for that fyttem of religion, and defence of Chriftianity, was what I had moflly extracted out of Limborch, and fome other divines, without Dr. Innes'shelp, or even knowledge, though what follows there, with refpect to Church government, was wholly his, as may be eafily perceived from the difference of ftyle and method. However, when all thefe kinds of converfations were ended, my doctor failed not to fpur my pride fill farther on, by telling me what thofe gentlemen faid in my commendation, which, whether or not exaggerated by him, gave me fuch an extraordinary notion of my parts, that I was proud of every opportunity of thewing myfelf in all companies and $\mathbf{Y}$ public places, without any other view than that of feeding my natural vanity, whilf he was privately purfuing what appeared to him more weighty, the advanciny of his fortune, to which end he ftrove ' troduce me, and himfelf by my me: :? all the great men in church andze ate which he found no hard matter ts: "do, becaufe, ere I had been in London three mionths, ${ }^{-}$

## ( 213 )

1
months, I had been fo cried up for a prodigy, that they were all exceedingly defirous of freeing and converfing with me; and not only the domeftic, but even the foreign papers, had helped to blaze forth many things in my praife, for which there was not any foundation. Thus I remembet a remarkable article from London, printed in the Dutch and French papers, that the young Japaner had been prefented to the archbishop of Canterbury, who admired him chiefly for his readiness in freaking a great variety of languages. Whereas I cannot call to mind that I poke any but the Latin, which his grace having either forgot, or being unufed to my foreign pronunciation, was forced to have interpreted to him, by Dr. Innes, in Englifh. So that I found I needed not to be very folicitous to blow my own trumpet, when the common cry, and the public parers, did it beyond my expectation for is. I had indeed a fluency of the Latin, and a fmattering of feveral modern languages, as well as a great readiness in learning them, had I applied myfelf to them; but I boated of more knowledge in them

## ( 214 )

by far than I had, efpecially in the oriental ones; tho' at that time quite ignorant of them:
I had not been two months in London before the doctor perfuaded me to tranflate the church catechifm into my pretended Formofan language ; and I, tho' much againt my will, was forced, by his overbearing command, not only to perform the odious tafk, but to prefent it afterwards to the bihop of London, who received and rewarded it with his ufual candor and generofity, and laid it up among his other curinus manufcripts, tho' it rather deferved to have been condemned to the flames. However, the doctor had his own views tn ferve, one of which was to confirm me in ${ }^{-4}$ the good opinion of that worthy prelate, $\div$. and of as many other gentlemen as fhould either fee or hear of it. And at.other, to make me exert my talents in inventing and familiarifing myfelf to this pretended Formofan language and character, for fear want of it fhould caufe fome unexpected difcovery, at leaft before he had qot the preferment he was in purfuit of. When I had finifhed the pretenited verfion, the not

## ( 215 )

only examined it himfelf carefully, but got other perfons to do the fame, who all found the language fo regular and grammatical, as well as different from all others they knew, both with refpect to the words and idiom, that they gave it as their opinion, that it muft be a real language, and could be no counterfeit, much lefs have been invented by fuch a ftripling as I; and hence fome of thofe of my oppofers, who thought me a Romifh prieft in difguife, imagined that I had been affifted in, or taught it, by fome of the fraternity beyond fea: I fhould have obferved, that I had taken care to write it in one column in Roman character, with an interlineal Latin verfion in Italick, and in my invent-

- ed character on the oppofite column. As he found me to fucceed fo well in this vile piece of invention, he foon after prevailed upon me to write the hiftory of Formofa, and got feveral of his and my in-quaintance to back the motion, as a thing which would bring much credit and profit to me, and be very acceptable to the public. One might have imagined, that a tafk So arduous and datigerous would have flatt-

$$
{ }^{P_{4}}
$$

led

## ( 216 )

led fuch a raw young fellow as I was, bcing then fcarce twenty years old, and fo very great a franger to thele countric I had indeed. got fome imperfect, nu.ins from a few books that had fallen in my way, as well as from converfation with thofe who had either been in thofe parts, or had read more about them than I, but was forced to hatch many things out of my own fertile fancy, to fupply the defects of my knowledge. . One thing I found a great help and relief from, that the accounts' we then had of that ifland from Candidus, a Dutch minifter, who had refided there, and from the reft of the

- writers who had in fome meafure copied him, were fuffed with fuch monitrocis abfurdities and contradictions, and that the place upon the whole was' fo very unknown to the Europeans, even to thofe who had been in China, Japan, and other parts of that country, that I might the more eafily make whatever I hould, of it, to pafs current with the ger of the world. So "that without muc fitation I undertook the work, and retolv-' ed with myfelf to give fucha defcription


## ( 217 )

of it as fhould be wholly new and furprizing, and hould in moft particulars clafh with all the accounts other writers had given of it ; particularly that it belonged to Japan, contrary to what all other writers and travellers have affirmed of its being -fubject to China. And this I was left to hammer out of my own brain, without any other affiftance than that of Varenius's defcription of Japan, which Dr. Innes put into my hands, to get what 1 could out of it. All this while both he and the bookfellers were fo earneft for my difpatching it out of hand, whilf the town was hot in expectation of it, that I was fcarcely allowed two months to write the whole, - notwithfanding the many avocations I had - by frequent vifitors, and invitations abroad. So .that it is no wonder the thing came out fo crude, imperfect, and abfird, and more fo would it have 'been, ' had not the perfon, who englifhed it from my Hatin, affifted me to correct many more and greater improbabilities, which I had not had time to difcover: but he likewife was hurried on by the bookfellers,** and had the fewer̃ opportunities of confalting
(218)
fulting me on that head. Befides, theqe was one maxim 1 could never be prevatiled upon to depart from, viz. that whatever I had once affirmed in converfation, tho' to ever fo few people, and tho' everusa improbable, or even abfurd, fhould never be amended or contraditted in the narrative. Thus having once, inadvertently in converfation, made the yearly number of facrificed infants to 'amount eighteen thoufand, I could never be perfuaded to leffen it, though I had been often made fenfible of the impoffibility of fo fmall an ifland lofing fo many males every year, without becoming at length quite depopulated, fuppofing the inhabitants to have been fo ftupid as "to comply with, or the? priefts inhuman enough to have exacted fuch a number of human victims. I muft . moreover obferve here, that my friends found fill a much weightier objection againft my account, wiz. how fuch a fttipling as I muft be when I left that coortry (for being then but near twenty years. of age I could not be fuppofed to have been above fiffeen or fixteen, upon my pretended coming away) could give fuch

## ( 219 )

a large and particular account of it, as could hardly have been expected from a man of twice my age. Many of them were hence inclined to impute what was fo liable to objection in my narrative to my want of years and experience, which might make me the more liable to miftake. This, though a very candid excufe for me, I was not inclined to admit of, and therefore, to abate the wonder, was forced, by Dr. Innes's advice, to affume three years more than I had, and to pretend I .was nineteen years when I came away, and between twenty-two and twenty-three at the writing of the book; more than that had I pretended to be, my face, air, and behaviour would have given me the lye, -for in that only refpect did I appear what I really was, a raw, young, hot-headed and inconfiderate fripling. However, thefe monftrofities, as I may juftly call them, which gave me fo much trouble to vindicate afterwards, both in company and in a new preface to the fecond edition of that vile romance, have really, fince I came to be in a better mind, proved no fmall comfort to me, fince they have been an effec-
tual means of difcrediting the whole relation, and faved me the trouble and thanpe of doing it in print, efpecially during the life of many of my worthy friends, who, from a real principle of candor and charity, had publicly engaged in my quarrel, and to whom fuch an open acknowledyment moult have given the greateft mortification ; fo thathough I was come by that time to abhor the impofture, yet I contented myfelf with owning it only to fome of my moft intimate friends; and in other company, when queftioned about it, with turning the fubject in fuch manner as should give them to underfand, that I was ahamed to enter farther into it.
The firft edition had not been long publifhed before it was all fold, and a new one demanded, with fuch alterations and vindication of the old one as might moft likely promote the fale, and fatisfy at once the curiofity of the public, arif the avarice of the proprietor; for, as to me , I had only the frnall fum of ten guineas for the copy of the firt, and twelve more for the improvements in the fecond, befides fuch prefents as were made; me by the

## (221)

the generous few to whom I prefented them. But before I ventured on the fecond, I was fent by the good bifhop of London, and my other friends, to Oxford, to purfue fuch ftudies as I was fit for, or inclined to, whilft my oppofers and advocates were difputing here about the merit or demerit of the firft. And when I came to the univerfity, I found mañy learned and worthy friends as warmly engaged for, as others were againft me; and with this' feeming advantage on my fide; at which I have had frequent occafion to bluh, that the former were men of the beft character for candor and probity, as well as learning and parts, and whom, for that very reafon, I forbear, as I ought, to name, their partiality for me being the mere effect of too extenfive a charity and generofity, and which only expofed them to the farcafms and ridicule of my opponents.
However that be, I had a convenient apartment affigned me in one of the molt confiderable colleges by the worthy head of it, a man in high reputation for his writings and univerfal skill in all polite literature,

## ( 222 )

ture, and efteemed one of the molt accomplifhed gentlemen of his age. was not, indeed, immatriculated, for reafens fcarce worth troubling the world wih'; but had fill the other advantages of learning which that college or the univerfity could afford me, either by accefs to the public and private libraries, or by acquaintance with fome of the learned in feveral other colleges as well as our own, and in this laft I had, moreover, a very worthy and learned tutor affigned me, who not only gave me leave to affift at all the lectures he read to his other pupils, fome of whom were gentlemen of high birth and fortune, and greatly advanced in learning, but allowed, and even invited me to make. fuch objections as my mind fuggefted to me, or even to chufe the fubject of our entertainment, whether the Newtonian philofophy, logic, poetry, or divinity; which laft was, of all others, my favourite one, as well as in a great meafure his, for he took orders foon after I left Oxford. As to the mathematics, in which he was alfo well fkilled, though I had a great opinion of that ftudy, yet could I never
be prevailed to go over the threfhold; and. the needlefs demonftrations, as I then thought them, to many of Euclid's propofitions, which appeared to me felf-evident, fuch as that the lines that are drawn through a circle, are longer or fiorter according to their nearnefs or diflance from the centre, and others of the like nature, feemed to me rather trifing than ferious or ufeful, and I could never have the patience to be better informed. Hiftory, efpecially ancient chronology, \&c. appeared fo dark, intricate and liable to fuch unfurmountable difficulties, that I neverexpected to meet with any fatisfaction in them, worth the time and pains they would coft to learn, fo that I was a long while before I could be induced to read Scripture hiftory, neither did I begin to be converfant in it till I came to have a tafte for the Hebrew tonguc, which was not till many years after, and that by mere accident, as I fhall fhew in the fequel. Church mufic, which was then in great perfection by the encouragement which the worthy dean of Chrift-Church gave it, as well as by feveral of his excellent compofitions in
that kind, was the main thing that "captıvated my vain foving fancy, and took-up... moft of my fpare hours, though I was not a little afhamed to fee what drunken, idle ragamuffians compofed almoft every choir there, and with what indolence, to call it by no worfe a name, they performed their parts, except on fome more folemn occafions than ordinary, as when the bifhop, or fome perfons of diftinction, appeared at the Divine worfhip. The evening I commonly fpent with fome felect company, but without drinking to excefs, or even to a degree of exhilaration, which I neither wanted nor was inclined to, and at the ufual hour of nine retired to my apartment. But here to make a fhew, at. leaft, of retrieving the time I wafted abroad in the day-time in company, mufic, 8cc. I ufed to light a candle, and let it burn the greateft part of the night in my fudy, to make my neighbours believe I. was plying of my books; and fleeping in my eary chair, left the bed often for a whole week as I found it, to the great furprize of my bed-maker, who could hardly imagine how I could live with fo little fleep,

Ileep, and without the ufual benefit of bed refrefhment. Had I not been bleffed with a ftrong confitution, feafoned moreover by two years fatigues in the army; and by my living moderate and low, I might perbaps have felt the fad effects of fuch an irregularity, and I don't know but my apprehenfion of it might be one main motive that induced me to make a fhew of it, in order to give it the greater merit; for I began to pretend to have fwelled legs and feet, and a gouty kind of diftemper, which my friends failed not to attribute to that, and earneftly intreated me to fubmit to more regular hours and method of reft. They likewife prevailed upon me to go and drink fome medicinal waters at a fmall diflance from the city, it being then the feafon, and a good deal of company of both fexes reforting to its; : but as I knew myfelf to fand in no need of any of thofe helps, I went thither only twice or thrice, rather for the fake of the company, diverfion, and mufic; but as my pretended lamenefs gave me a kind of gravity, which I was not willing to part with, not knowing how to keep up to the one without the

$$
\text { ( } 226 \text {, })
$$

other, I went Atill limping about like an old gouty fellow, though no man could. enjoy a better fhare of health and flow of fpirits than I did all the time I flaid there.
It were a fhame for me to tell how idy I fpent moft of my timp, and how little progrefs I made in fuch a place, company, and among fuch noble libraries, and learned acquaintance; $;$ for, excepting thofe lectures which I heard from my tutor, molt of what I got was by converfation, but little or nothing by reading, except in books of controverfy, almoft the only ones that could captivate my roving mind. However, it was during my thort abode here, (fcarcely fix months) that I employed my leifure hours in correcting and revifing my romance of Formofa, and wrote the beft anfwer I could to the objections that had been made to the firft edition, in a fecond preface, which, all things confidered, met with much greater approbation than it deferved, from thofe few intimates I had fhewed it to; after which, taking my leave of all my friends there, I fet out for London, where I foon after publifhed that fecond edi-
edition. At my coming to my old lodgings in Pall-Mall, where Dr. Innes and I had formerly lodged, I was told that he was gone over chaplain-general to the Englifh forces in Portugal. I had no reafon to regret his abfence, for he had, before I went to Oxford, been guilty of fuch notorious and barefaced immoralities, as well in this as in a former lodging in the Strand, both thofe of fober and reputable families, that his character had greatly fuffered by it, and he went away, juft time enough to fave himfelf the mortification of being Chamefully turned out of this laft, as he had been out of the former. Had I been, indeed, a real convert from heathenifm to Chriftianity, it might have been truly faid of him, what our Divine Mafter faid of the Pharifees, compafling fea and land to gain a profelyte, and making him ten times more wicked than themfelves; and he hath been more than once feverely reproved by his acquaintance, for the fcandalous example he gave to me in particular, who was admired by them for the contrary virtues. The truth is, he had an almoft infurmountable propenfity to wine and women, and


## (. 228 )

when fraught with the former, fell immos dérately foul on the latter, whether maids or married, not frrupling to ufe even violence; which I particularly mention, becaufe his behaviour in thefe, and feveral other refpects, tee fay nothing of what I have hinted in a former note, gave me but too much caufe to think that he had no real regard to religion, either natural or revealed ; fo that had I not been happily reftrained by Divine Grace, his example would not have failed to have extinguighed all fenfe of remorfe whichaccompanied every indirect action I did, and confrmed me in downright infidelity, in which cafe I might never have been to happily made fenfible of the error of my ways, as I hat: fince been, nor ever repented of them, till it had been too late. I have therefori great reafon to acknowledge it the greateft mercy that could befal me, that I was io well grounded in the principles and evidence of the Chriftian religion, that neither the 'converfation of the then freethinkers, as they loved to ftile themfelves, and by many of whom I was feverely attacked, nor the writings of a Hobbs, Spinofa, Toland,

## ( 229 )

Toland, Collins, Tindal, \&c. againft the truth of Divine revelation, could appear to me in any other light than as the vain efforts of a dangerous fet of men to overturn a religion, the beft founded, and moft judicioully calculated to promote the peace and happinefs of mankind, both temporal and eternal ; I muft own, that the fophiftry which perpetually runs thro' their writings, like the warp through the woof, gave me but too much cajut to fufpect their fincerity, and that the inveteracy they thew againft the nobleft fyftem of morality that ever could be thought of, to which all their united force could never fubftitute any thing better, or near fo good; is but a forry proof of their pretended love to truth, and to the good of mankind, efpecially when I confidered how fully and frequently their writings bave been anfwered and exploded by better hands, without any other vifible effect than that of their trumping up the fame old trite arguments in fome new drefs, and claiming a frefh victory from them.

$$
\text { Q } 3
$$

## ( 230 )

I hope that what I have now wrote will not be deemed by the candid at leaft, as defigned to proclaim my own praife, feeing. it rather aggravates my guilt that I could act fuch a notorious piece of hypocrify, contrary to the frongeft convictions I then felt, that it was impious and offenfive to God. What I chiefly mention it here for, is only to obferve, that it was that very conviction (which his good providence would not fuffer to be quite extinguified in me, though he permitted it to be fo long kept under by the impetuofity of my wild and ungovernable vanity) that did at length coosperate with his grace to work in me an utter abhorrence both againft that vile and dangerous paffion, and the ftill viler crimes it had involved me in : for if fincerity is one of the mof effential virtues of the gofpel, how abominable muft fuch a long-winded and multifarious difilimulation appear to a guilty perfon, when brought to a deep fenfe of it, however light it might feem to him in the more youthful and inconfiderate part of his life? Thofe only who have felt can judge of the fmart and horror of it, under

## ( 23 F )

under which nothing could well fuppore them but a fure reliance on the death and merits of a Divine Saviour, and a fincere repentance for, and deteftation of it. For as fuch a happy change can only be the work of Divine Grace, fo it gives one a moral and comfortable affurance of pardon and acceptance at the throne of infinite mercy, through the efficacious interceffion of our common Redeemer and eternal High Prief.
But though I occafionally mention it here, I would not have it inferred from thence, that I began fo foon to give way to fo fa; lutary a remorfe. I was too young, vain, rafh and thoughtlefs to be any other way influenced by it, than as it put me upon finding out the moft fenfelefs excufes and palliatives, fuch as every one may eafily guefs at, that hath been, like me, a llave to youthful paffions. So that above half a fcore or a dozen years were mif-fpent in a courfe of the moft hameful idlenefs, vanity and extravagance ; fome fort of gallantry with the fair fex, with many of whom, even perfons of fortune and character of fenfe, wit, and learning, I was

## ( 232 ) .

become a great favourite, and might, if I could have overcome nyy natural theepihnefs and fear of a repulfe, have been more fucceefful either by way of matrimony or intrigue; which I bave fince the more wondered at,' confidering my great propenify , to women was as frong as my vanity, and the opportunities fo many and inviting, and I'fo little fcrùpulous about the danger or guilt of them ; yet I may truly fay, that hardly any man who might have enjoyed fo great a variety, ever indulged himfelf in fo few inftances of the unlawful kind as I have done. This I am far from hinting by way of pretence to a greater degree of virtue, of which no man could then have a lefs fhare than $I_{\text {; }}$ for in thofe 'few, wherein I was unhappily engaged, but efpecially one whereing my affection was captivated to an immoderate degree, no man purfued them with more eagernefs and excerfs than I did. But I am far enough from being inclined to entertain my reader with a detail of my fad irregularities and follies, either in this or other refpects, which I have long fince looked back upon with fhame and forrow,
forrow; only, with regard to fuch kind of unlawful amours,. I cannot recal to mind my. ftrong and vehement bias for them, without thankfully acknowledging that there muft bave been fome fecret providence that kept me from giving fuch way as I might otherwife have done to the ruin of my health, circumftancess, \&c. or my being unwarily. drawn into fome unhappy marriage, or other frares, into which I have obferved many a one lefs rafh, extravagant, and inconfiderate than I, have fo unhappily fallen into.
I was led into this fenfe of God's divine providence towards me, by fome (I may fay) unavoidable obfervations on his gracious difpenfations, in which it was impoffible for me to be miftaken : one was, my meeting with an almoft confant difappointment in my moft pleafing profpects, my moft fanguine expectations and favourite projects, whenever the end propofed was the fatisfaction of my predominant paffion, or the means to attain it were fuch as my confcience condemned as unlawful; fo that I feldom failed of reaping fome pungent fhame; mortification or dif-

## ( 234 )

grace,' .where I expected approbation and applaufe, or with loffes and poverty, where 1 looked for profit or gain. On the other hand,' whenever I chearfully entered into any laudable method of living that offered itfelf, or rather, which the fame good Providence threw in my way, I always met with furprifing fucceefs, and with fuch credit and approbation as made me ample amends for the fruggles my pride made againft it on account of its meannefs. I fhall take the liberty of giving a fignal inflance, becaufe it hath an immediate connection with the impofture I was fill friving to carry on, and conequently deferves to be expofed.
I had been about five or fix years in England, and lived in fuch an extravagant and carelefs manner (if not in expences, which were rather moderate than lavifh, had I been in any laudable way of gaining : a competency, but which for want of that often run me into debt, without any vifible way of extricating myfelf) when a plaufible way was offered to me, by one Pattenden, of getting money, and credit too, by a white fort of Japan which he had

## ( 235 )

found out, and was then, in vain, endeavouring to recommend to the world, tho' it was really a curious fort of work. His propofal was, that I fhould father, and introduce it, under the notion of my having learned and brought the art from Formofa; on which condition, and my putting now and then 2 hand to the painting, he offered me a confiderable fhare in the profit. I readily agreed to his. propofal, not only on account of the profit we fuppofed it would bring, but much more fo as it would yield a kind of convincing proof to the fabulous account I had given of myfelf. We accordingly advertifed it under the name of White Formofan Work ; and it was viewed and greatly admired by the curious for its fine whitenefs, finoothnefs, and hardnefs, and for the beauty of the other colours painted upon it: notwithfanding which, and all the extravagant encomiums we gave it, by far beyond what it really deferved, and our care and artifice to conceal its real faults, for fome it had, we could never make it fucceed fo as to be gainers by it. And though our difappointment might be owing

## ( 236 )

owing, in fome meafure, to the vaft high price he rated it at, contrary to my opinion, yet I have caufe to blefs God it fo happily mifcarried, and was forced to quit it ; for had the projet fucceeded according to my fanguine hopes, it would have hardened me only the more irretrievably in my vile impofture and felf-conceit, but its being fo unaccountably blafted, in fpite of all our endeavours to pufh it forward, did not a little contribute to infpire me with a dilike to all fuch unlawful and difhoneft ways of getting of money, though this was not the immediate refalt of my difappointment ; on the contrary, I grieved at it, and at fome other of the like nature, for fome years, till the frequency of them made me fee clearly into the true caufe of them, and fully perfuaded me that nothing but an honeft and fincere intention, followed by the ufe of right and lawful means, could be attended with fuccefs; for I attempted fince then feveral other means of getting of money, which, though not equally odious as this, were fill blameable in me, by reafon of my incapacity for them, fuch as the practifing

## ( 237 )

practifing a kind of empyrical phyfic, teaching of fome modern languages, \&c. of which :I neither was a fufficient mafter, nor capable of a competent application to make myfelf fo. However, as I was hap: pily difappointed in them all, and as. I had reafon to think juftly too, it fet me, at length, on a more honeft and laudable fcent; and it was not long before Providence threw That in my way, which neither my pride nor my reluctance to a clofe application, would have fuffered me to have fought after, or even thought of: for a counfellor of Lincoln's-Inn, who brought up his three fons and a daughter under his own eye, and had a better opinion of me by far than I deferved, fent for me, and propofed to me the infructing his fons in the Latin tongue, and fuch other branches of learning, as I hould think them capable of, at his own chambers. I readily accepted the offer, notwithftanding the falary was rather too fmall for the charge, as I was to attend them twice a day, and fend, at leaft, three hours with them every day, and lived at fome diftance from him. I was, in about a year's time, honourably difcharged,
difcharged, upon his fending them to be farther educated beyond fea.
Soon. after this I was recommended to be, tutor to a young gentleman, about eight miles from London: his father, who was an officer in the army, had kept him for feveral years at fome confiderable fchools to little purpofe, for when I came to him, he could' hardly tranllate one line out of the plainef Latin authors, which he attributing rather to the remiffnefs of his former mafters, than to his want of genius, refolved to give him a home education. I found him, however, fo unacquainted with every grammar rule, and fo averfe to begin afrefh with it, he being then near fifteen years of age, that I was obliged to acquaint his father with the little hopes I had of him in the literary way, and propofed the teaching him fome other branches of learning, for which he fhewed a readier genius, and particularly fortification, which, as I formerly hinted, I had learned from our indolent Jefuit, and of which I was become a pretty good mafter, by converfation in the army, by feeing a good number of confiderable fortreffes in feveral

## ( 239 ).

parts of Europe, and more particularly by reading Vauban, Cohorn, and other eminent authors on the fubject. My propofal was readily agreed to both by father and fon, and the latter made a confiderable progrefs: in it in a little time, infomuch that we had not only gone through all the theory of it, and he could take, any plan of a place, but had likewife made. a model in clay of a large fortified city, in which I had contrived to have a fecimen of every thing that related to the art of fortifying, both in the regular and irregular way, engineering, \&c. and which, when finifhed, was not a little admired, not only as a novelty, but likewife as a compleat piece of fortification. The misfortune was, that my falary was neither anfwerable, as I thought, to the pains I took with my pupil (whom I fill made; at proper times, apply himfelf to Latin, and other branches of literature) but likewife, through the extravagance of the father, very ill paid; which made me fo much the more uneary, as I had contracted fome debts which I hould have been glad then to have paid. with it. This, at length, determined me before

## ( 240 )

before the year was quite out, to accept of an offer, which not only appeared more advantageous, but likewife more fuitable to my vanity, though it fo far difobliged the gentleman's father, that he made no fcruple to refure paying me what was fill due to me, and to let me go from him with vifible tokens of his refentment.
This happened juft after the rebellion was broke out in Lancalhire and Scotland, anno 1715, on which account new troops were railed every where, and he became fo confiderable and flum of money, that I might have made my own terms to have' faid with him. But, by that time, fome of my friends had prevailed upon the major of a regiment of dragoons, to make me the offer of being clerk to the regiment, and as I knew him to be by far a much finer, and more generous gentleman of the two, nothing could diffuade me from accepting it. He could not, however, prevail on the other captains to make me clerk to their troops, that, being, as they faid, a perquifite belonging to the quarter-mafter; but it did not binder him

## ( 241 )

him from retaining me to this, and making fuch additions to the common falary out of his own pocket, as made it near an equivalent, and the friendhip and regard he fhewed me, made me be looked upon as a fit companion to the reft of the officers, feveral of whom having had a liberal education at fome of the univerfities, it was not long before we came into a kind of intimacy; there was, befides, another thing, which procured me no fmall efteem among them, viz. my becoming very foon acquainted with the clergy and other gentlemen in every place we came to, efpecially with the learned and curious, by which means I could introduce fuch of our officers to them as were men of merit or character, as the moft part of them were. But what added fill more weight to the reft was, that my friend, the major, who had often heard me called by the familiar nick-name of Sir George, in fome of the families where he had become acquainted with me, after the peace of U trecht, took it into his head not only to continue the fame file to me, but even to give it out, that I had been knighted by R

## ( 242 )

queen Anne. This laft I was indeed wholly. ignorant of, for a long while, and denied it as often as the queftion was put to me, but was, however, fo fond of the feather in the fool's cap; that rather than forego $\mathrm{it}_{1, \text { I }}$;ufed to lay a ftronger claini to it, under pretence of my birth and family, for I fitl paffed current for a Formofan, and was as proud as ever of being thought fo, as it procured me fuch an accefs a: mong perfons of rank and learning, which I likewife made a means of bringing our officers and them into a familiar and agreeable acquaintance, who might otherwife liave been more, than ordinarily thy of each other at that eritical juncture. I might add, that as I was likewife a greater favourite of the fair fex, than any of the red coats, whom they could not but look apon with fome dread at that time, I had frequent invitations from them, even thofe of rank and fortune, whofe curiofity would not permit them to fuffer fo great a. ftranger as I was to come, or even to pals fo near them, without having the pleafure of feeing and converfing with him, and informing themfelves in all the particulars

## ( 243 )

particulars that related to him. And as $\mathbf{I}$ always took care to behave in fuch a manther as might gain their efteem; as weil as admiration, fo I could the more eafily ini $\downarrow$ troduce fuch of our gentlemen as bore an unexceptionable character to them, by which means we had the fatisfaction of fpending many a pleafant day in their company in the moft innocent and agreeable manier, particularly in Lancalhire, and, after the fuppreffion of the rebellion, where we continued quarters, at Wigan, Warfington and Manchefter, in which laft I had, moreover, the opportunity of frequently vifiting a noble library belonging to the collegiate church, and well furnifhed with all manner of books that could be purchafed with money: for it is endowed with 1001 . per ann. to fupply it with new. ones as they come out, and yet, when I was there, they had above 500l. in bank, and fcarce knew how to lay it out, infomuch that they were thinking of purchafing of fome of the moft curious manufcripts. This, I could not but obferve to them, was ill judged, confidering the fituation of it, chiefly among tradefmen, who

## ( 244 )

have neither tafte nor knowledge of fuch valuable pieces, and the few learned men in that neighbourhood that could reap any henefit from them, and rather advifed them to lay out that income in purchafing fuch valuable modern' books, as were yearly publifhed both in England and out of it, and which, I thought, would better anfwer the intention of the noble donor. They feemed to acquiefce in what I faid; but whether they followed my advice or not, I never enquired fince.
Thefe allurements, fo foothing to my natural vanitys, and our often moving from one county to another, made me ftay longer:in the regiment than I ought in reafon or confcience (had I been capable of liftening to either) to haye done, confidering that I was of no fervice, but only a dead weight to my friend the major, who, being moreover as bad an œconomift as myfelf, would have been glad enough to have been rid of me, though he never, either in word or carriage, gave me the lealt hint of it, but rather the contrary; yet fome of thofe friends of mine, who had recommended me to him at firft, had more than

## ( 245 )

once advifed me to eafe him of fo expenfive a load; yet fo pleafed was I with this wandering and idle kind of life, which gave me an opportunity of travelling through, and feeing, fo many countries I hould otherwife never have been able to fee, that I could not prevail upon myfelf to leave the regiment, till it was ordered into Ireland, and then marched as far as Briftol with them, and faw them embarked for that kingdom: fo that I had been, from firf to laft, fomewhat above two years in this wandering kind of amufing life, without reaping any other advantage than the feeing variety of places and people, and converfing here and there with fome learned men and books, though nothing fo much with the latter as I might have done, if my indolence, vanity and the variety of objects which danced before my eyes, had not diverted me from it.
Upon my return from Briftol, I was at no fmall lofs how to difpofe of myfelf for fome time, and having had time to ruminate upon my mif-fpent time and idle life, was eafily induced, by fome of my friends, to alter my courfe, and, if poffible, to get $R_{3}$ inta

## ( 2.46 )

into a way of earning a competency by my own induftry, rather than live at other people's coft, or, which was much worfe, on their charity, which I could not now but look upon myfelf as a moft unworthy ob-' ject of; and, as I had a little fmattering of painting and drawing, and had I been capable of a proper application, might, with affiftance, have attained to a confiderable proficiency in it, having a ftrong genius for, and no indifferent judgment in it. However, to go the neareft and eafieft way to work, I refolved on that of fan painting, which required 'lefs time and pains to learn; and had the profit been any thing anfwerable to my affiduity, I could have been contented to have drudged on with it fill. But that bufinefs was then at fo low and contemptible an ebb, that, though I lived with a good family almoft gratis, and was early and late at work, yet 1 found it impofible to get a bare competency by it; notwithfanding the encouragement feveral of my friends and acquaintance gave me. This, however, brought me acquainted with a worthy clergyman; who, thinking the employment

## (247)

ment too mean for a man of my education and parts, and that I might beftow my time to much better purpofe in fome kind of laudable ftudy, particularly that of divinity, which I had always been moft fond of and converfant in, engaged to raife a fubfcription among his acquaintance, by which I might be enabled to follow my ftudies with more eafe. He did it accordingly, to the amount of between twenty and thirty pounds per ann. which, with the help of a fmall addition I got to it, by perfecting of a young gentleman in the Latin tongue and fome other branches jof learning, made it a comfortable competency, efpecially as I was become, by this time, a better œconomift, and had fallen into a more frugal way of living.
But all this while this fubfription. did lie fomewhat heavy on my confcience, and at fome particular times gave me no fmall uneafinefs, inafmuch as it was founded on a belief of my being a Formofan, and a real convert to the church of England, which thofe pious fubicribers had not any doubt of, that I could find, even to their dying day; for whenever I waited on them, I always met $\mathrm{R}_{4}$ with

## ( 248 )

with the kindeft reception and civil treatment that could be wifhed. This uneafinefs ftill increafed, as I now and then met with fome people at their houres, whofe behaviour and objections, though not in plain terms, gave me but too much reafon to think they had not the fame charitable opinion of me; and this put me upon various indirect means to prevent my friends being prevailed upon by them to withdraw theirbenevolence. This made me often wifh and pray, that I might but fall into fome more honeft way of living without it, and free myfelf by it from that aggravated remorfe, with which I was forced to receive it. But though I was fully perfuaded of the guilt, yet I was not fenfibly enough affected with it to make an open confeffion of it, and how unworthy I was of their charitable opinion and affiftance; and contented myfelf with making fome refolutions of giving up the latter, at leaft, as foon as I could get myfelf into a way of living without it.
I became, at length, providentially I may fay, acquainted with a perfon who was concerned in various branches relating to

## ( 249 )

the printing trade, and in very good circumftances. He' was, moreover, a very generous and good-natured gentleman, and I became, in a little time, fo great a favourite, that he could fcarce pafs a day without feeing and confulting me about fome of his affairs; and by his means $L$ came at laft to tranflate books; and to get a comfortable living by it. -It was then I began to perceive, with no fmall joy, how God bleffed my endeavours in proportion to my diligence and honefty, which made fo lively an impreffion on my mind, that I refolved never to be concerned in any works, that were either prophane, heretical, or of a trifling nature or ill tendency, and have accordingly refufed them whenever they have been offered to me. From tranlating of other people's works, I came at length to print fome of my own, and with the fame laudable view, and have found ftill more credit and comfort in it, and more caufe to blefs the Divine mercy , for the wonderful and undeferved fuccefs I have fince met with. But of thefe I fhall fpeak in a more proper place; in the mean time I hall only ob-

## ( 250.)

ferve here, that my charitable friends, dying one after another, as my bufinefs increafed, I never applied to the furvivors for a continuance of their benevolence, but declined it where it was offered, as being then able to live without it: and I can only add, that though I once looked upon thefe fubfcriptions as no lefs unworthily beftowed upon, than bafely received by me, yet I have had the comfort to oblerve fince, that they proved the happy means of freeing me from a more laborious and unprofitable life, and of enabling me to follow thofe ftudies with more eafe and chearfulnefs, which fitted me, in time, for thofe more arduous and beneficial tafks,' which I have been fince engaged in ; feeing it was during the greater part of that time, that I applied myfelf to the Hebrew tongue, and to the more clofe fudy of the facred books; by which means I had an opportunity of making a large. collection of critical and other remarks, which, though defigned then only for my own information, came at length to have a place in one of thofe works I hall fpeak of in the fequel, where they have fince met with the approbation of the public, both in

England

## (25i)

England and abroad; though even under thofe encouragements, and with thofe opportunities I had, I muft own, to my fhame, that I was fill far enough from fuch a laudable application, as might have turned them to better advantage ; and that. I ftill mif-fpent a great deal of my time in à loofe, carelefs manner, and that it was not till after a year or two that I difengaged myfelf from company, efpecially of the fair fex, though, one perfon excepted, rather trifting than culpable, to follow my books more clofely. I hall, therefore fk ip all the former part of my time, from the twentieth to the thirty-fecond year of my age, as a fad blank to every thing that was good or laudable, and fraught with a difmal variety of folly, indifcretion and other mifcarriages, which would rather difguft than inform, or even divert a fober reader, to come to a more hopeful and inftructive period; and only obferve, before-hand, that it was no fmall happinefs to me, (which, to whatioever owing, I ought at leaft to attribute to my own difretion) that the many learned
' and pious perfons I was formerly, and continued fill, acquainted with, (for it was

## ( $25^{2}$ )

with fuch that I moftly chofe to converfe) were never acquainted with, nor, as $\$$ could perceive, ever fufpected me of being guilty of fuch a hameful, idle and fcandalous way of living, but believed that $\mathrm{I}_{\mathrm{s}}$ fpent moft of my time to better purpofe; elfe it is not to be doubted but $I$ had been difcarded and hhunned by them. In which cafe I hould have entirely loft the moft effectual means of coming into a better way of thinking, which their converfation, example, and the many good books which they lent me, did at length happily bring me to, and been left, like a weather-cock, expofed to all winds: for though I could talk, and, at fome ferious intervals, think as ferioufly as they of religion and its molt important duties, and even comply with them in fuch a manner, as feemed very delightful and edifying to them; yet was my roving heart fo far from joining fincerely, or being affected with them, that I could eafily forego them, to indulge any new rifing fatisfaction, though ever fo oppofite. And indeed, fuch a frequent variety did offer itfelf naturally in my way, as I was in no way able to refilt.

## ( 253 )

Thus, for inflance, it was natural for thofe intimates to introduce or renew fome old fubject or topic relating to my pretended country, travels, converfion, or other romantic part of my life, which, however: irkfome it was then become to me to repeat, and as it were toconfirm anew; yet there was ${ }^{*}$ no way for me to avoid it, unile's $I$ had at once acknowledged the whole relation to have been a notorious and thameful impofture $;$, and what a deadly wound muft have fuch an unexpected confeffion given to my natural vanity? and what a mortification would it have been, to fuch fincere honeft people, to hear it from my own mouth? fo that, could I even have had courage enough to forego the former, as I have more than once thought and even refolved to do, yet how could, I find it in my heart to give fo fenfible a difpleafure to perfons. that had fhewn fo much friendfhip and zeal for me? to fay nothing of the dreadful apprehenfions of the confequence of their charitable opinion being thereby turned into a juft abhorrence and deteftation: This , was the fad dilemma I found myfelf in when I came to reflect ferioully on my cafe;
cafe, and which made me conclude it, all things confidered, altogether impoffible for me to extricate myfelf out' of, without fome miraculous power to affift me to overcomé a- paffion, which had hitherto eluded all the oppofition which my reafon and ex.perience had been able to raife againnt it. But what glimpfe of hope of any fuch Divine help.could fuch a ${ }^{2}$ wretch have, who, with his eyes open to the guilt and dan* ger, had brought himfelf into fuch a'dangerous fate? But God's mercy, which is over all his works, is not to be judged of by us according to our narrow apprehenfions, but according to the gracious manifeftation he has given us of it in his gofpel; and as that affurance gave me good grounds to hope, fo that hope infired me with a defign to ufe all proper means to obtain it, and leave the iffue of it to his Divine Providence. To him, therefore, I thankfully give all the praife for his undeferved and fingular bleffing on thofe means which himfelf directed me to, and what the chiefeff of then were I have already mentioned, and fhall take notice of fome others in the fequel, in hopes they may.
may prove of fervice to fuch as may fland in the fame need of them as I did then. However, I muft own, that the refolution had fomething awful and deterring, when I confidered it in its full extent, to exchange the delights of variety and multiplicity of company (which had been fo delightful and infaring to me till then, that no motive or obftacle could keèp me from it) for folitude and retirement; their bewitching flatteries and commendations, whether for a falfe merit I had affumed; or for fome valuable things they fancied in 'me, for a clofer recollection and abhorrence of my own vilenefs; to fpending of fo much precous time in the gaities and guilty vanities of life, for a more clofe application and. fearch after the propereft and moft effectual means of redeeming that invaluable jewel, and the parcelling and beftowing it to the moft beneficial purpofes ; to retrench not only all unneceffary and unlawful expences, but even fome of the common and neceffary ones, in order to make fome amends for paft extravagancies, by fupplying the wants of thofe many objects, that ufed to pafs by unobferved and unpitied by me. Thefe,

## ( 256 )

Thefe, and other fuch like indifpenfable preparatives, to the defired thorough change, feemed to carry fuch unfurmountable difficulties, with them, that neither my fmall thare of reafon, nor philofophy could have fupported me to any tolerable degree in the refolutions $I$ was daily ftriving to make, after. it.: And indeed, nothing fo effectually did it, as the confideration that that Divine Providence, which had infpired me with that defire, would not fail of compleating it, if I was not wanting to myfelf; for that at once fet me upon trying fometimes one, fometimes another, of thofe duties, with fuccers eniough at lealt to encourage me to proceed.
And here I was again providentially helped by a worthy clergyman at Braintree in Effex; who, good man, had a much better opinion of me than I deferved, and prefented me with that excellent book called Reformed devotions, and recommended by the late reverend Dr. Hicks. This excellent book, though then unknown to me, and difrelifhed by fome weak Chriftians, is fo well known to all the true devout ones, that I need fay no more in commendation

## ( 257 )

of it, than that it proved of fuch vaft benefit to me, that I can never fufficiently admire it, or the piety of the compiler and reformer; for the many opportunities. and invitations it gives one of frequent and clofer intercourfe with God, and of meditating, in the moft exalted manner, on his various works, infinite mercies, and on all the fublime truths and duties of Chriftianity, did fo effectually reconcile me to that folitude and retirement I had formerly been fo averfe to, and afforded me a mott noble refrefhment feveral times a day, from my clofe application to other ftudies. I was then purfuing, fome of which being of the dry, others of the complex kind, might have gone but fluggifhly on without it. The late pious Mr. Nelfon's Method of Devotion falling likewife, foon after, into my hands, in order to be conveyed, by my means, to a young gentlewoman lately recovered from a fate of defpondency, I had the curiofity to run through it, and found in it fuch ex-- cellent, yet eafy rules for the conquering of our natural vices, and recovering the contrary virtues to them, that I made it one

## ( 259 )

of my daily monitors, and with no fmall fuccefs.
But that which gave me the greatef help, was the learned and pious Mr. Law's Serious Call to Devorion. This truly valuable treatife I accidentally found on a clergyman's table,: who, neverthelefs, foon took it out of my Kand, and gave fuch a character of it, as might have difcouraged me from looking farther into it, had not the place I had opened given me a quite different notion of it. However, as I could not prevail upon him to lend it me, I went and bought me one, and read it over and over, from beginning to end, with greater eagernefs and fatisfaction than any I had ever met with on that fubject. I was particularly much taken with the author's motives, as well as his method for the right ufe of our time, money, talents, \&c. not to mention that his variety of characters and reafonings upon them, which are a continued appeal to the moft unbiafled and foundeft judgement, which adinit of neither cavil or objection, foon opened to me a much better way of applying them. to ad vantage, than any I had hitherto, or could . indeed

## ( 259 )

indeed have fallen into, without fuch an. excellent guide. The directions he gives for the obtaining of thofe Chriftian virtues, which he there recommends as the proper fubject for the feveral hours of prayer in the day, may indeed appear to have fomething too technical (fince it is no other than a daily renewing of thofe very defires, till themfelves become the virtues we want) from which too much of the fuccefs may, by the light and thoughtlefs, be afcribed to the method, and too little to the grace of God accompanying it. For may not, fome will be apt to fay, an honeft heathen or deift, by the fame method, raife himfelf up into a habit of fobriety, chaftity, \&cc. without any fuch application to, or particular affitance from, the Supreme Being? yet let any ferious. perfon try the efficacy of it againint any of his favourite, efpecially his conftitutional vic̣es, and he will find, at length, that he hath been only trying to wafh a Blackmoor white, and muit do fo to the end of the chapter, without the intervention of Divine grace. As for me I hall always, I hope, look upon the defire itfelf, as well as the fuccefs of the
means ufed for the obtaining any virtue, to be alike the work of God in the foul 2 . let thefe be fuch as Mr. Law directs, or any other, which Providence puts into our hands.
I had long before this, however, began to confecrate pare of my time to the ftudy of the facred books, tho: not in that regular and uniform manner as I happily fell into after reading the excellent directory above mentioned, and had made a pretty collection of criticifms, and other obfervations upon them, fuch as occurred on my reading of the various commentators on them; and now it was that I became fenfible, indeed, of my own want of knowledge of the original Hebrew, and to bewail the lofs of feveral opportunities I had miffed of gaining a more perfect knowledge in that facred and ufeful tongue. For I' had been fo difcouraged from the purfuit of it, by the difficulties I met with at the very threfhold, that is, in the grammàs, that I never had the patience to go thro' one of them, but contented myfelf with the interliniary verfions of Pagninus, Arias Montanus, and other Interpreters;

## ( 26.1 )

chufing rather to rely on their bonefty and fkill, than to be at the trouble of becoming a proper judge of either. It was not indeed poffible for me to go on long in this groping way, before their various interpretations of the text, (efpecially thofe of fome bold critics, which feemed calculated. to unhinge, rather than confirm our belief, by exploding feveral, till then, acknowledged facts and doctrines, or interpreting them in their own artful way) fet me again upon making fome frefh efforts, for attaining a more perfect knowledge of the original, which were however foon damped by every frefh difficulty I met with in the common way of learning it, till I providentially fumbled, as it were, on the following eafy method.
I was then hammering at an exercitation on the $34^{\text {th }}$ Pfalm, printed at the end of the grammar that goes under the name of Bellarmine; in which I found at almoft every word fome exceptions to the grammar rules, and fuch reafons affigned for them as ftill carried one farther from the point in view; when a poor man came and offered me a pocket Hebrew pfalter, with

$$
\text { ( } 262 \text { ) }
$$

Leuffen's Latin verfion, over ag̀ainft eacly page. Igreedily bought it, and finding the ver fion much more eafy and natural than thofe literal ones of Pagninus and Montanus, _. quickly went through every verfe in the book, without troabling myfelf about grammar; or any thing but the true meaning of every word as they occurred. So that by the time I had given it a fecond reading, my memory being the beft faculty I could boaft of, I had by that very rote, as I may call it, not only gained a confiderable copia verborum, but by obfervation on the flexion of nouns, verbs,.$\& c$. got a tolerable infight into the declenfions, conjugations, and other parts of the grammar and fyntax; and, whenever any difficulty or doubt occurred, couldeafily turn to my Bellarmine or even Buxftorf, the moft difcouraging of all; becaufe, having then but one point in view, I could, without perplexing my mind with any more than that, either fatisfy myfelf about it, or at the worft poftpone it, till a further reading and obfervation-brought me to it ; I became fo fond of this method, that having gone through a third reading of $i t$, with little or
no obftacle, and in a very little time', I re-folved thenceforth to confine myfelf to the pfalms ofeach day, as they are read at church, and to begin with the hiftorical books.
Here, intead of perplexing myfelf with fuch Bibles as had the fervile letters printed in a different kind of character, to diftinguifh them from the radicals, Ipitched upon the firft edition of that of Munfter, which is far inferior to the fecond, and, by the help of his verfion on the oppofite column, though often at feveral lines diftance from the original, had hardly gone through fix or eight chapters of the firf book of Samuel, before the eafe I found in it invited me to go back to Genefis, and take every chapter in its courfe. I refolved at firt to run them over once, without taking notice of his notes, becaufe the greateft part of them were either of the Mafforetic or of the Cabbaliftical kind, and, would rather clog than affitt; and even in thefe of the grammatical fort he lays all along fo.great a ftrefs on the punctuation for the :true meaning and import of each word, as made his verfion the lefs to be depended upon. For
though I always did and do ftill look upon the points to be of fingular help to learners and confequently on the method propofed by fome moderns of teaching the Hebrew without them, as wild, intricate, and in ${ }^{-}$ fome cafes dangerous, yet from all I had been able to gather from the learned authors who have wrote on the controverfy, I was fo far from thinking them of the fame authority with the text, they plainly appeared of too modern a date to be ufed in any other Chape than as an expeditious help; and as fuch I ftill made ufe of them, without confining myfelf to them any farther than they were fupported by the dialect, by the ancient paraphrafes and verfions, and other fuch critical helps, but made no fcruple to depart from them whenever: a fmall change of them could afford one a clearer or better fenfe. And for that I fhall refer the reader to what $I$ have fince wrote on that fo much controverted fubject in the Jewih hiftory, which makes the feventh chapter of the Univerfal Hiftory, and efpecially in the folio edition, where I had more room to expatiate upon it than in the octave one, in which our being confined :\%

$$
(.265)
$$

to reduce the whole within the compals of twenty volumes, obliged us to be a little more concife. I muft therefore here own with pleafure, that all that I there advanced hath been fo well received, and looked upon as fo well grounded, that it hath not, that I know of, been fince cenfured or contradicted; and that though the controverfy in favour of the antiquity and authority of the points hath been of late revived with no fmall warmth, I have met with nothing in it, nor heard from eiber thofe I converfe or correfpond with, any thing that could give me caufe to alter my mind. I hall only beg leave to add, that my looking on the Hebrew points, both vowel and gramatical only in that view, enabled me to make many ufeful difcoveries in the facred books, which have been highly approved by thofe who have fince read them in the biftory abovementioned.
But to return to my firf reading of the original books, I ran with eafe through the Pentaeuch, Johhua, Judges, \&c.except the few poetical parts which occur in if, fuch as Exod. wv. paff: Deut. xxxii. Judges v: i Samuel

## ( 266 )

muel ii. $1-10$. where the ftile is not only fwoln and figurative, but where the conftruction is harfh, irregular, and to appearance, trancated, and feveral terms which occur no where elfe; fo that finding them too hard ${ }^{-}$ for me to furmount, with all the application I had, I poftponed them to a future reading. I found likewife pretty near the rame difficulty in the Proverbs, Ecclefiaftes, and the Song of Solomon, and much more fill in Job; and therefore contented myfelf with catching as much as I could at one curfory reading, and leaving the reft for hereafter; yet did not this difcourage me from going through all the Prophets in courfe, though it proved an arduous tafk, and I went but flowly on, becaufe in thefe I endeavoured to make myfelfas much mafter of their meaning and ftile, as well as of the new words and phrafes peculiar to them: and as I fpent generally fome hours a day on that ftudy, I had quickly gone through all the facred books of the Old Teftament, excepting thofe chapters in Da niel, Ezra, \&c. which are in the Chaldee, and where I contented myfelf at this firf reading, with examining as well as I was .able,

## ( 267 )

able, the difference between that and the Hebrew. And here I own I found fuch a difparity between them, fuch a noble fimplicity; and yet mafculine energy in the latter, and fuch an apparent foftnefs and effeminacy in the former, not unlike what is jufly obferved between Latin and Italian, that I believe nothing could have tempted me to become more acquainted with it; had it not been for the vaft helps" which the Chaldee e paraphrafe affords us, not only in fixing the meaning of many obfcure words and expreffions, but, what is fill more valuable, in difcovering the fentiments of the ancient Jews concerning many pregriant prophecies of the Meifliah, from which the Talmudic writers have fince departed out of diflike to him.
When I came to the fecond reading of $\mathrm{Ge}-$ nefis, by which time I had likewife tan through the Palms five or fix times, and was got again into the hiftorical file, I found myfelf fo unclogged, fo acquainted with the grammar and fyntax, and mafter of fuch a vaft number of words, that I began to think I might begin to read the Latin into Hebrew; that is, by hiding the Hebrew column
column with my band, try how I could make my own agree to it. This I found however too hard and tedious, except in fome eafy places or chapters, and I found myfelf not only at a lofs for the words, but mofly in the conjugating and fyntax, and though it might in all likelihood have quitted coft, had $\mathbf{I}$ proceeded regularly in that method ${ }_{2}$.yet I found it too tedious, as, it took me above twice the time, fo that I contented myfelf with only trying it now and then, when the humour took, or the fubject invited me to it. At other leifure times, I ufed likewife to exercife myfelf in conjugating of verbs by dint of memory and obfervation, and then to compare it with thofe in the grammar, by which I foon found out wherein I was deficient, and this I thought more expeditious, diverting, and effectual, than the dull method of beginners, who, by dint of hammering, learn them by heart, fcarcely knowing what they are about. One thing however I found would be a.great help, viz. in all dubious words, as the Hebrew is fo figurative and fcanty; to have recourfe to the Lexicon, in order to find out the primitive fenfe of them
from

## (269.)

from the more remote; which it was eafy to do by the parallel texts there pointed at, where they occurred. This method duely atterided to, opens a facious infight into the true meaning of the facred books. Thus I found for infance in the words כרודחפת Genefis i. 2. the fpirit of God moved upon the face of the waters, compared with the motion of the-eagle in ftirring her young ones to flight, Deut. xxxiif, 11. that the verb in the former in its primitive fenfe, is not fuch a motion as our verfion expreffes, nor a brooding like that of the hen over her eggs, as fome other tranlations intimate, but a lively agitation, fuch as much better explains the action of the fpirit of God upon the face of the waters. This method, which I preferred to the confulting that variety of verfions we have, which rather confound than fix the fenfe, inabled me in my very fecond going through the facred books, to make a pretty large collection of fuch kind of criticifms and obfervations, as have been fince of fingularufe to me in the progrefs of my fudy, and in fome of thofe works in which I bave been fince engaged, though I little thought then that

## (. 270 )

either they, or thofe which I made out of other authors that came in my way, would ever come into public view.
I had by this time made fo great a proficiency in the Hebrew, tongue that I could have talked it pretty fluently, had I been as well acquainted with the pronunciation of it: But as that could not be attained from grammars, which differed almof as much in the rules they gave for it, as the native languages of their apthors differed from each other, I thought it might be more eafily attained by converfing with the Jews themfelves, going to their fynagogues, and hearing the Scriptures read by their chazans or minifters, who, I fuppofed, were perfect mafters of it. But here, to my great furprife, I found that they not only greatly differed among themfelves, that is, the northern from the fouthern, or German, Polifh, Hungariap, \&ct. from the Spanif, Portuguefe, Italian,' \&cc. but that every one of them prơnounced it after the fame manner as they did the languages of the countries where they had been brought up, and, as it plainly appeared to me, none of them right. And this was farther confirmed to me by converfing

## ( 271 )

verfing with fome Morocco Jews, whofe native language being the Arabic, made me think they bid faireft for having retained the antient pronunciation in a greater degree at leaft of purity; for fome of them whom I met with by chance in the Portuguefe fynagogue, made a mere-tidicule of their way of reading and pronouncing it. And it was by converfing with fome of thefe, who were befides well acquainted with the Hebrew, that I took my rules for a more genuine way of fpeaking it: and it was no fmall pleafure to me to find, that I could be very readily underftood by all the fouthern Jews, though I could not fo eafily underftand them, on account of their not fufficiently diftinguihing between the founding of fundry confonants, afpirations, gutturals, \&c. which feemed to me to have originally differed very greatly; fuch as the $\dot{w}$ and $\dot{y}$ and $\square$ the $ב$ and $\pi$ the $y \pi$ and $s$ the $\Delta \pi$ and $y \& c$. but between which they do not make any diftinction, nor indeed can, for want of having been taught it in their youth. In the fame manner do they murder it , when they go about to write it in European characters, witpefs that Spanifh dialogue of the famed R. Netto, intituled

## ( 272 )

intituled but which he fpells, after his Spanih manner of pronouncing, es dat. However, after I had once been fully apprifed of all the defects of their reading, which feveral of them I have converfed with have had the ingenuity to own as fuch, I could eafily enousunderftand both their lectures of the Old Teftament and their prayers. But as to the northern Jews, I own I never could converfe with them in that tongue, without an interpreter, or fome ga-between, who, by the help of travelling into other parts, had learned the way to accomodate their fpeech to both ways of pronouncing, fo much wider and uncooth is theirs to that of the fouthern; and this was no fmall grief to me, becaufe I always found the northern. more learned and communicative; as well as more fluent and ready at fpeaking that facred tongue; though that confideration was never fufficient to induce me to be at the pains to accuftom myfelf to their way. Thus much I thought might be neceffary to fay with refpect to the pronunciation of the Hebrew, to which I hall only add, that my method for learning and preferving it

## ( 273 )

was by reading it aloud to myfelf, and with the fame exactnefs, as if I had been. reading it to an affembly.
But what contributed moft to this extraordinary readinefs of fpeaking it, was a method I fell into at proper times, when I found myfelf inclined to clofe thinking, to cloath my ideas in that, inftead of any other language, or, as one-may more properly word it, to think in Hebrew rather than in Englifh, or any other language I was ufed to. The Pfalter, which at my firf fetting up for this ftudy, I bad read over for fome time, at leaft three or four times a month, and afterwards conftantly. went through once a month ever fince, was become fo familiar to me, that I had got it by heart; and as that contains moft of the radical words, as well as idioms, - which are moft in ufe, I feldom was at a lofs for either in thefe my foliloquies, or,: if I was, I immediately endeavoured to call to mind where I had read any thing like it, either in that or any other of the facred books, and by turning to it, if I could not readily recover it by dint of memory, feldom failed of fixing it there,

## ( 274 )

indelibly. By this means I foon acquired not only. a furprifing fluency in it, but could fpeak it in the pure and elegant ftile of the facred writers, and now and then, upon occafion, raife it to the lofty ftrain of the poetical books. This I was the more admired for, becaufe it was what few, if any, of the learned among the Jews could do, who commonly marred their own by an heterogeneous mixture of the corrupt Talmudic and Rabbinic words and idioms, to which I was then in a great meafure a ftranger, nor could ever be reconciled to after I became more acquainted with them. One may, indeed, obferve almoft the fame difference between the former and the latter, fome few of thefe excepted, as there is between the Latin of the Auguftin age, and that which was in vogue after the inundation of the northern barbarians into the Roman empire, as the reader may fee by what I have faid of it in my Hiftory of the Jews from their Difperfion after the deftruction of

## - Jerufalem to this time.

By what I have faid hitherto of my method of learning, Hebrew, any one may

## ( 275 )

fee how eafily men at years of maturity may come to as perfect knowledge of it, as the thing will admit of, and without the difcouraging flavery of beginning at the grammar, and may even make that a pleafing relaxation from other ftudies; and it is with a view of leffening, if not altogether removing thofe fancied difficulties and difcouragements which have been the caufe of that facred tongue being fo much, and, I may add, fo thamefully neglected, by the clergy efpecially, that I have ventured to write fo far on that fubject from my own experience; for, let them think of or palliate it as they will, fuch a neglect muft of neceffity be condemned, by all who ferioully confider how impoffible it is to come at a true knowledge, not only of the Old, but I will be bold to fay of the New Teftament, without a fufficient knowledge of the Hebrew : the firft feems to me felf-evident, and with refpect to the fecond, or New Teftament, I need only oblerve, that the writers of it, though infpired, and endowed with the gift of tongues, did vifibly adhere fill to. the Hebrew idiom in which they had been T 2 brought

## (276.)

brought up, St. Paul himfelf not excepted. Hence, the vaft quantity of Hebraifms that occur more or lefs in the Gofpels, Acts, and in the Epifles, and which never can be rightly underftood or explained, but by having recourfe to the Hebrew idiom; but this hath been fo fully dif played by much better pens, that I hall fay no more on the fubject.
I have often wifhed, indeed, that we had fome more inviting helps to that fudy. than we have, and fuch as might more effectually. contribute to overcome the ayerfion, or indifference, which our young clergy feem to have for it. And in order to contribute fomething more than a bare wifh towards: it, I had once gone a good way in compofing a tragi-comic piece, intituled, David and Michol, in Hebrew verfe; wherein I introduced, this young. princels, acknowledging with a fuitable reluctancy and fhame to her confident, her new born affection for the young rhepherd, after the had feen him, unperceived: from behind a curtain in her father's pavilion, and heard, fome of thefe inimitable ftrains with which he was wont to enliven

## ( 277 )

enliven that defpending monarch in his moft melancholy, hours. The diftrefs arifing from the apprehended rivalhip of her eldeit fifter, who was foon after promifed as a reward to that brave youth, for killing the vapouring champion of the Philiftines and Morabs, being reprefented here as having already fettled her affections on Adriel the Meholathite, to whom Saul actually gave her foon after, contrary to his promife ( 1 Sam. xviii. 19.) the different fears and emotions of the two fifters, the means by which they came to underftand each other's cafe and inclinations, the fingular affection of Jonathan towards David, and the kind offices he did him with Saul; in order to procure him his beloved Michol, inftead of her filter; all thefe, I fay, are reprefented in divers affecting fcenes, to which the energy of the Hebrew gives no fmall beauty and pathos. The Epifodes, the moft confiderable of which confift of feveral interviews and conferences between the prophet Samuel and young David, as when he acquainted him with Saul's utter rejection, and his being chofen by God to fucceed him in the Ifraelitifh

- $\mathrm{T}_{i} 3$ king-


## ( 278 )

kingdom, David's furprife, fcruples and fears, his dread of entertaining even the moft diftant hope of a crown, which he could not obtain but by the moft unnatural and blackeft treafon againf his father-inlaw, and his mof generous friend Jonathan, and the arguments by which the prophet endeavours to fatisfy his fcrupulous mind, that he flhall enjoy the promifed crown, without the leaft ftain to his loyalty, and at length prevails on him to fuffer himfelf to be anointed king; thefe, and fome others of lefs importance, are not improper interludes to bring the piece to its happy cataftrophe, his marrying the kind and beloved Michol, and being juftly raifed to the command of the Ifraelitifh army. To this I had added a literal verfion, which ldefigned to have illuftrated with critical notes; but fome avocations obliged me to fet it afide for a confiderable number of years, and when I came to give it a frefh reading, I found it to fall fo thort of the elegance and loftinefs of the facred poets, with whom I was become by that time. much better acquainted, and a much greater admirer of, that I was quite difcouraged from improving

## ( 279 )

improving or even finifhing, efpecially when I confidered the little likelihood there was of its meeting with encouragement anfwerable to the pains and coft, at a time when one might obferve the ftudy of that tongue to dwindle more and more vifibly into contempt, among thofe whofe duty and bufinefs it ought to have been to cultivate and promote it.
The fame mortifying confideration made me likewife fet afide a defign I had formed, of compiling fome fcriptural Hebrew Dialogues, in imitation of the Latin ones of Caftalio, and a fet of others on more common fubjects, like thofe of Corderius, tho' not fo puerile, for the encouragement and diverfion of young beginners; and a third between a Jew, and a Chriftian, on the - moft material points of controverfy between us, together with a collection and expofi$\gamma_{\text {tion }}$ of a great number of texts, both in the Old, and New Teftament, plainly foretelling the future reftoration of the twelve tribes of Ifrael, to their own Land, and their embracing Chriftian religion at the fecond coming of Chrift, towards

## ( 280 )

the clofe of the fixth, of in the beginning of the feventh millenary of the world; for though that doctrine is, as the Jews at Rome faid of Chriftianity, every where fpoken againft, (Acts, cap. ult. v. 22.) I never found it to be fo but by men who, like thefe Jews had never rightly confidered it ; whilft thofe who really have, (among whom I have known feveral eminent divines of the church of England, and fome among the Diffenters who were thoroughly fatisfied with it) contented themfelves with owning their belief of it to their intimate friends, without daring to preach or promote it, for fear of being reflected or ridiculed for it. But I have had frequent occafion to obferve fince (vide Jual un Heftor, fol. edit. vol. i. p. 613 , \&c. 8 voh edit. vol. iii: p. 39. and above all, fee the, conclufion of their hiftory, from the difperfion to this prefent time) that the Chriftians denying that doctrine, is one of the moft effectual means not ouly of hardening the Jews in their unbelief, but of unhinging one of the greateft evidences of the Chriftian faith, fince it cannot be proved in any fenfe, that any of thofe glorious pro-
phecies

## ( 28 I )

phecies concerning the happy fate of the Jews under the Meffiah, which are fcattered through the Old and New Teftament, have been fulfilled; but that, on the contrary, they have for the moft part been hated, perfecuted and miferable, in moft countries in the world, ever fince the death of Chrift. However, as I had little encouragement to hope that fuch a fubject, written in Hebrew, how beneficial foever it might have proved, at leaft to young beginners, efpecially by the help of the Latin verfion, would relifh with the prefent age, I likewife poftponed it for fome happier time, which is not yet come, if ever I hould live to fee it.
I therefore contented myfelf with preparing for the prefs a new edition of the Pfalms, with Leufden's Latin verfion over againft it, and fome critical and other notes for the ufe of the learners, interfperfed here and there, with others of a more curious nature, on feveral defficient places of that book, and moft of them new. To this I defigned a preface, that fhould give an account of the method by which I had, chiefly by the means of the pfalms, attained to my knowledge

## ( 282 )

Jedge of the Hebrew tongue, in the manner I have lately related. I defigned to add fome further directions than thofe I have mentioned, with refpect to the more eafy attaining a readinéfs of underfanding and fpeaking it, one of which was, in the frequent reading to change the third into the fecond perfon at proper places, and fo turning the pfalm into a kind of prayer, which, by raifing the attention, imprints the words more in the mind, as well as familiarizes the conjugating of the verbs, \&cc. and this I found a great help to my progrefs, and was approved by fome judges, upon which I acquainted Mr. Palmer, of Bartholomew's Clofe, one of the beft printers then in England, with my defign, and was furprifed one day on my coming to talk furthen about it , to hear that the reverend Dr . W — had been there juft before, to treat with him about printing a new edition of it, faid to have been compiled by Dr. Hare, fince bihop of Chichefter, who pretended to have found out the true metre of the Palms, and by means of that to have made a great number of confiderable difcoveries and emendations in the original. I knew
but

## ( 283 )

but too well how many, excellent critics had already fplit upon that fatal rock, and who, inftead of correcting, had quite marred the Hebrew, by diftorting, tranfpofing and altering it at pleafure, in order to bring it to their model, to expect any thing folid or fatisfactory from that quarter, confidering efpecially the character of the author. Nor was I miftaken, though this performance did not appear in print till feeven or eight years after, and then to my great furprife. For Mr. Palmer had amufed me with the belief that the defign was fet afide, either on account of its being found impracticable, or at leaft too difficult and dangerous; for that, upon his applying to Dr. W—— to enquire further about it, he had received fuch evafive anfwers, as plainly convinced -him, that the author did not defign to go pon with it, which fill confirmed me more in myold opinion, that all attempts to recover the antient metre of the facred poetical books, were fruitefs and loit labour. It appeared however, as I fhall thow hereafter, that Mr. Palmer impofed upon me, and that he knew that the defign was carried on in another printing-houfe, though

## ( 284 )

with fuch privacy, that I never heard or dreamed of it , though I had been long acquainted with Mr. Bowyer, who was employed in the printing of it. So far from it was I , that I began to think Mr . Palmer had only invented that fory to divert me from printing my propofed edition, in order to fet me upon another work, in which he was more immediately concerned, and expected greater credit, as well as prefent profit from. This was his hiftory of printing, which he had long promifed to the world, but for which he was not at all qualified. However, he defigned to have added a fecond part, relating to the practical art, which was more fuited to his genius, and in which he defigned to have given 2 full account of all that relates to that branch, from the letter-founding to the moft ele-gant way of printing, impofing, binding, \&c. in which he had made confidetable improvements of his own, befides thofe he had taken from foreign authors; but this fecond part, though but then as it were in embryo, met with fuch early and ffrenuous oppofition from the refpective bodies of letterfounders, printers, and bookbinders,

## ( 28.5 )

binders, under an ill-grounded apprehenfion; that the difcovery of the myftery of thofe arts, efpecially the two firft, would render them cheap and contemptible (whereas the very reverfe would have been the cafe, they appearing indeed the more curious and worthy our admiration, the better they are known) that he was forced to fet it afide. But as to the firt part, viz. the hiftory of printing, he met with the greateft encouragement, not only from them, but from a very great number of the learned, who all engaged to fubfcribe largely to it, particularly the late earls of Pembroke and Oxford, and the famous doctor Mead, whofe libraries were to furnifh him with the nobleft materials for the compiling of it, and did fo accordingly.
The misfortune was, that Mr. Palmer, knowing himfelf unequal to the tafk, had turned it over to oine Papiat, a broken .Irim bookfeller then in London, of whom he had" agreat opinion, though ftill more unqualified for it than he; and only aimed at getting money from him, without ever . doing any thing towards it, except amufing him with fair promifes for near three quar-

## ( 286 )

ters of a year. He had folong dallied with him that they were come within three months of the time in which Mr. Palmer had engaged to produce a compleat plan; and a number or two of the firft part, by way of fpecimen of the work, viz. the invention and improvement of it by John Fauft at Mentz; and thefe were to be fhewn at a grand meeting of learned men, of which Dr. Mead was prefident that year, and being his fingular friend and patron, was to have promoted a large fubfription and payment, which Mr. Palmer food in great need of at that time. Whereas Papiathad got nothing ready but a few loofe and imperfect extracts out of Chevalier la Caille, and fome other French authors on the fubject, but which could be of little or no ufe, becaufe he frequently miftook them, and left blanks for the words he did not underfand. Thefe however, fuch as they were, Mr. Palmer brought to me, and earneftly preffed me that I would fet afide all other things I might be then about, and try to produce the expected plan and fpecimen by the time promifed, fince he muft be ruined both in credit and pocket, if he difappointed his friends

## ( 287 )

friends of it. It was well for him and me, that the fubject lay within fo fimall a compafs as the confulting of about twelve or fourteen principal authors, and the controverly between Mentz and Harlem univerfally decided in favour of the former, fo that I eafily fell upon a proper plan of the work, which I divided into three parts, the firft which was, to give an account of the invention of the art, and its firft effays by Fauft at Mentz, and of its imprevement by fufile or metal types, varnifh, ink, \&c. by his fon-in-law Peter Schoeffer. The fecond was to contain its propagation and further improvement, through moft part of Europe, under the moft celebrated printers; and the third an account of its introduction and progrefs into England. This, together with above one half of the firft part, were happily finifhed, and produced by: the time appointed, and met with more approbation and encouragement from his friends than I feared it would, being confcious how much better it might have turned out, would time have permitted it. And this I chiefly mention, not fo much to excufe the defects of fuch a horrid performance,

## ( 288 )

mance, as becaufe it hath given me fince frequent occafion to obferve how many much more confiderable works have been fpoiled, both at home and abroad, through the impatietice of the fubfribers; though this is far enough from being the only, or even the greateff inconvenience that attends moft of thofe kinds of fubfriptions.
As to Mr . Palmer, his circumftances were by thistime founaccountablylow and unfortunate, confidering the largenefs and fuccefs of his bufinefs, and that he was himfelf a fober induftrious man, and free from all extravagance, that he could not extricate himfelf by any other woy, but by a fatute of bankrupt, whicn caufed his hiftory to go fugginhly on ; fo that notwithfanding all the care and kind affiftance of his good friend Dr. Mead, a flubborn diftemper, which his misfortunes brought upon him, carried him off before the third part of it was finihed. This defect, however, was happily fupplied by the late. noble earl of Pembroke, who being informed by Mr. Pain the engraver, Mr. Palmer's brother--in-law, what condition the remainder was left in, and that I was the perfon who had

## ( 289 )

wrote the former parts, fent for me, and, with his ufual generofity, enjoined me to compleat the work, according to the plan; and not only defrayed all the charges of it, even of the paper and printing, but furnihed me with all meceffiry materials out of his own library; and, when the work. was finihed, his lord hip referved only fome few copies to himfelf, and gave the remainder of the impreffion to Mr. Palmer's widow, not without fome farther tokens of his liberality.
Before I leave this fubject, I muft, in juftice to that noble peer, give an inftance or twa of his generofity and fingular integrity. At my firt coming i..." Fringland, I had had the honour to be introduced to him, and t $\}$ dine with him and other great perfons in his company; and had received no fmall tokens of his regard, till he conceived a fuft difguft at one abfurd fact I had affirmed in my fabulous hiftory of Formofa, viz. the Greek tongue being taught there as a learned language, which monftrous abfurdity fufficiently fhewed my ignorance and indifcretion at the time of my writing $i t$, and from that time his lordihip gave me up U • for

## ( 290 )

for what I waśs àn impoftor, and I faw him no more, till above twenty-eight years after, when Mr. Pine brought me to him, in order to finifh the book abovementioned. At my firt cöming into his prefence; his lordfhip prefentlaknew me again, and reminded me of my having been often with him, and of the reafon of his taking a dillike to me; upon which I readily owned the jutnefs of the charge, and of his refentment, which I begged his lordfhip to look upon as the effect of a raih inconfiderate piece of youthful vanity, which I had long fince difclaimed, and condemined myfelf for, and affured him, that I had fince then, I thanked God, fallem into fo laudable a way of living, as I doubted not his-lordihip, if he knew pf it, would not but approve of. Mr. Pine confirmed what I had faid; and his lordThip with his ufual affability and condefcenfion, highly congratulated and commended me for it, and was pleafed to exprefs a more than ordinary pleafure at it, cahorting me to continue in the fame good mind and way, and affuring me of his friendThip and encouragement; and from that time I cannot fufficiently acknowledge his

## ( 291 )

extreme benevolence and condefcenfion; in not only furnifhing me with all the books and other helps I wanted, but in his generoully rewarding me for what I did; and when I was forced afterwards to acquaint him that I was a perfon concerned in the writing of the Univerfal Hiftory, became a fubfriber and encourager of it, as I hall prefently have occafion to fhew. It was a little before Mr. Palmer's death, that this work, the project of which had been formed by Mr. Crockat, and the excellent plan by: the late famed Mr. Sale, met with an unexpected fop, by an unhappy quarrel between the proprietors and the authors, at the head of whom was Mr . Sale abovementioned, when I was recommended to the former as a proper perfon to fupply the place of fome of the latter, who had abfolutely declined being farther concerned in it. This rupture happened foon after the publication of the third number, anno 1730, when Mr. Palmer brought me the three printed numbers from the proprietors, and defired, if after having read them and the plan, $I$ had a mind to engage myfelf in the work,

I hould give them and the reft of the authors a meeting at a place and day appointed, which I accordingly did, and after baving informed myfelf with their terms, method, and other previous particulars, readily undertook to write the Jewihh hiftory, in which I was the moft verfed, and for which I knew myfelf. already provided with a confiderable quantity and variety of materials, which I had been collecting for my private ufe for feveral years; and as I have been one of the chief perfons concerned as an author, not only in the firft, but alfo in the fecond edition, and fo was perfectly acquainted with every ftep taken in the progrefs of the work, the encouragements and, difficulties it hath met with, as well'às with the merit and demerit of every part. of it, I fhall make no difficulty to infert here a faithful and impartial account of the whole, at leaft fo far as it may be of fervice. to the public, and prove a means of making any future editions more compleat, by pointing out the many falfe fteps which I found were impoffible for us to avoid in the two former.

And

## ( 293 )

And here I múnt obferve, in the firt place; that though the defign was publicly pretended to be carried on by a fociety of learned gentlemen, yet in fact Mr. Sale was to be the fole conductor of it, by the affitance of fuch ammanuenfes as he hould think fit to employ in the work. And though, in point of learning, no man might be better qualified than he, for fuch an arduous and exteñfive undertaking, yet his known ftrait' circumfances obliged him to have fo mañy other irons in the fire (to fay nothing of his natural indolence, the fad effects of which, not only the proprietors of this work, but many others of that profeffion have fufficiently felt) that it was impoffible for him to give it that attention which a work of that nature deferved, much lefs the difpatch he had engaged with them for, viz. the publihing twenty flieets per month. Accordingly upon enquiry I could not find that he ever wrote more than the firft number; which, though puffed up with the fecious pretence of a fecond edition, every reader verfed on the fubjects treated in it, might eafily know where he had got all his materials ready


## ( 294 )

gathered to his hand; yet 'fo löng was he in publifhing it, that his delay occafioned the firft mifunderftanding between him and the proprietors, which was however followed by a greater. The fecond and third numbers, which appeared afterwards to have'been written by his $t$ wo ammanuenfes, till then unknown to the partners, came out indeed more regularly; but the proprietors, who had already paid Mr . Sale for them, were not allittle furprifed when the two young authors (whom I forbear naming, becaufe they are both alive and make a good figure, the one in a high poft, and the other in the commonwealth of learning) came and demanded the money for their copy. The propietors did indeed producice his receipts for much greater fums than the three numbers could amount to, but though they knew that he was not in a capacity to pay them, they refufed to make a fecond difburfement for what they had more than payed for, whilft the fufferers, on the other hand, refufed to go on further with the work, till they were fatisfied for what they had done. The parmers ftiffly refufing to comply, the refult was, that one of them

## ( 295 )

not only quite declined all further meddling in the work, but vented his refentment by crying it down, and all the perfons concerned ini it, authors as well as proprietors. Mr. Sale was ftill more outrageous againft them, of whom the latter had taken a note of 72 pounds, payable on demand, for money overpaid, and the embezzlement of a confiderable number of books, which they had furnilhed him to carry on the defign. This note was probably taken with a view of keeping him in awe, but neither that nor their threats could contain him within bounds, fo that he became a mof inveterate enemy to the defign, and did all he could to difcredit aṇ̣ obbefruct it.
This was the hopelefs fituation of the work at my firf being invited to it, and againft which I cannot forbear mentioning an--pther difcouragement, viz. the freedom which the authors of the foregoing part had taken in reffecting, as often as they had opportunity, againft the Mofaic account, elfeecially in the hifory of the antient Canaanites, where God is recorded to have treated them with fuch feverity in favour of the Ifraelites, and where they made no difi$\mathrm{U}_{4} \quad$ culty

## ( 296 )

culty to reflect upon that partiality, as inconfiftent with the divine juftice and goodnefs towards a favourite nation, who are there reprefented as by far the worfe of the two: for, as I took the liberty to obferve to them, befides that all the objections againft the divine conduct in this particular have been fo often and fo effectually anfwered by learned divines, that there can be no juttif: able reafon given for reviving them here, this manner of treating Mofes's writings is far below the regard that fuch an antient and celebrated author may challenge, abftractedly even from his being acknowledged an infpired penman, by Jews, Turks and Chriftians. And therefore added, I will never engage in the work, unlefs you whl allow me to follow the oppofite tract, and, inftead of reflecting, to vindicate both his character and writings, as often as occafion offers, either from the works of our beft divines, or from fundry new obfervations I have had opportunity to make on the books of that divine lawgiver. I much queftion, if they had not been at fuch a nonplus for
a hand to go immediately upon the Jewifh hiftory, whether they would have ever

## ( 297 )

yielded to thefe terms, fuch was their opinion of Mr. Sale, whom they knew had no great regard for the Old Teftament, and who had long ago in ipired one, if not both of his ammanuenfes with a moft outrageous zeal againft it. However, I got them with fome trouble to acquiefce, and let me take my own way, only Mr. Provoft, then one of the partners, begged it as a favour of me; that I would not be rigbteous over much. 1 gave them foon' after good caufe to be fatisfied with my:advice and conduct, and the unexpected encouragement which the -work met with, after the regular publica'tion of two or three numbers of the Jewifh hiftory (to fay nothing of the commendations given to it in print, by two fuch learned perfons as. Dr . Chapman, chaplain to his grace of Canterbury; and Dr. Pearce, rector of St. Martin's in the fields) raifed it into fuch reputation and vogue, that they no longer doubted of its fuccefs; infomuch that they began naw to enlarge the edition from 750 to 1000. And this I mention with pleafure, becaufe the great call there was for it from that time, to what they had found before, when the numbers

## (2;98 )

were returned to them by dozens from other bookfellers, plainly hhewed how ferw encouragers it would have met with among the freethinkers and unbelievers, to what it did among thofe of a different, and I may add, of a better way of thinking. There was indeed one main objection made, viz. my clafhing with thofe who had gone before me; and I remember more particularly, that the date earl of Pembroke (who, as I lately thinted, was an encourager of the work, and to :whom I was obliged to excufe my not waiting fojoften on him as he defired; in order to finilh the third part of Mr. Palnier's hiftory above mentioned, by acquainting his lordihip that much of my time was taken up; with the Univerfal His tory, rif which I was engaged) expreffed no fmall dillike at this contraft, or, as he was pleafed to call it, chequer-work between ithe Jewith hiftory, and fome of the numbers that-preceded it; the one expreffing all along an unaccountable difregard for the Mofaie 'writings, whillt the other took all proper oecalion to vindicate them, in a manner which he was pleafed to call fo very laudable and juft; upon which I was
forced

## ( 899 )

forced to acquaint bis lordmip, that the former part had been printed fopme time before I was conçerned in the work, and written by perfons in a very different way of thinking from me, and which I had publicly difallowed; but as they had fince declined the work, the proprietors had left me wholly at my liberty to take my own way, which I was fully determined to purfue to the end, fo that there would be no more fuch contradietions to be found in the fequel, becaufe all'that :related to the Jewih nation down to their difperfion at the defruction of Jerufalem, or even from that to the prefent time, if we were encouraged to continue it, would fall to my fhare; and that thole who were to write the hiftories bif the Afyyians, Medes, Perfians, and other nations which had any connection with the Jewih, Ahould be obliged to follow the fame tract, and acknowledge the divine authority of the Old Teftament. This his lordhip highly approved and as to the remaining difficulty, viz. the reconciling what was already printed, and he thought paft remedying, I, told his lordhipg, that the greateft past. of thefe early numbers having been

## ( 300 )

been millaid, and fo bandied about and wafted that there would be fpeedily a neceffity of reprinting them, I would engage to revife and correet them, fo as to make the whole uniform, which was foon after done accordingly. . But when, for the credit of the work, I propofed to the proprietors the calling in of the old numbers, and giving the purchafers the new ones in lieu' of them, the greater part of them lent a deaf eari to it, alledging, that they were fo much out of 'pocket already; that they could not afford to deftroy fog great a númber of copies for the fake of uniformitys and that the 'work muft take its chance without it.
This weas not the only inftance in which they ftood in theie own light; I mall' beg leàve to ald one or two more. Before the ninth' number of the firft volume had been'publifhed, they had received feveral letters from the learned both at home and abroad; directed to the authors, barticularly two from Holland, the one from a perfonic who trannlated our hiftory into. French, and the other into Dutch, and publifhed thèm thêe regularly every month, as we did fiete, :Thiefe, among other com-, mendations 1

## ( 301 )

mendations and encouragements, defired us to fend them the fheets as faft as printed here, for the better difpatch of their verfion, and keeping time with us; offering to make any reafonable fatisfaction for it, and to promote the credit and fale of the Englifh original on the other fide the water. The Dutch tranllator in particular, who was a man of learning and character, acquainted us, not without a handfome and modeft apology, with fome alterations and deviations he had taken the liberty to make from our printed copy, in the three ot four firft numbers, and defired us above all things to fettle a correfpondence with him, that we might freely communicate our thoughts to one another, promifing to fend us, at the conclufion of each volume a copy, of his verfion, with the alterations marked in the margin, and the fentiments of the learned beyond fea; about the work which he acgordingly did at the clofe of his firft volunde, though we had not been able to prevail upon the proprietors to fend them the fheets in the manner above defired, and .were not willing to do it without their con1 fent, they being all apprehenfive that thefe verfions

## ( 302 )

verfions would hinder the fale of the Englifh original there. We tried in vain to convince them of the contrary, by thewing them that it would rather forward it, by making it more known and famed abroad; for that not only the Englifh there, but likewife thofe who underfood that language, would ftill chufe to read it in the original rather than in a verfion. I likewife tried to make them fenfible how neceffaty and ufeful fach a correfpondence twould be to us, and how much it would in all likelihood contribute to the credit and reputation of the work, and what need we ftood in to ufe all proper helps, in a work of fo arduous and extenfive a nature. The only thing they would agree to, was that we might, if we thought fit, ftill correfpond with them, (and that they knew we could do without their leave) but as to, the fending the theets as foon as printed, they abfolutely refufed; fo that ue were forced to put an end to the one for want of being able to comply with the otheiv The next inftance I ihall give is ftill of a more fordid nature. . They were obliged to furnifh us with all neceffary books for

## ( 303 ):

for the work, and on my firt going upor the Jewifh hiftory, I fent them a lift of fuch as were really wanted, though fome of them very confiderable both in bulk and value, fuch as the Thalmuds, Polyglott, Opera Criticorum, \&cc. and was furprifed the difficulties they made; and objections ley raifed againft both the number and harge of them; alledging on the one hand ue valt number of them that had been forjerly embeezzled and loft, which they prerended to amount to near $200 \%$. and on the wther, the vaft expence they had already been at, and the little returns made for it in the four firft numbers; fo that if I would not-difpenfe with a good number of the deareft fort, they were afraid they muft defift from proceeding farther. It was well : for them, as well as me, that I had then a free accefsto Sion College library, by an órdef from the prefident and fome of the heads of that fociety, and which I had made uife of for fome years, whenever I food int nread it; fo that I readily engaged to frike out all thofe that I fhould- find there, provided they would promile to find me all thereft. By which miteans, as well as by the kind

## ( 304:)

kind affinarice of my good friend the reverend Mr. Reading, the late worthy librarykeeper, who having the goodnefs to bring me all the books I called for, without the trouble of my looking out for them in their refpective fhelves, to my writing delk at the farther end of the library, I could with eafe confult all my authors, make what extracts I wanted outof them, after which he took the pains of returning them to their proper places. Now as this faved the bookfelliers the buying of near, if not more than 1001 . worth of books, and me a great deal of trouble, (for Mr. Reading did moft frequently enquire of me what part of a book I defigned to confult, and being well acquainted with mọt of them, brought them to me opened at the very.place I wanted, which enabled me to make more difpatch, and to keep up to the time of publication) I infifted at one of our meetings, and I thought juflly too, that they fhould, by Jvay of acknowledgement, prefent either the librark, or the worthy keeper of it, with a fet of volumes, as foon as they come out, which, I told them, might likewife be a means of recommending!

## ( 305 )

recommending the work to thofe divines and others that frequented that place. They all feemed readily to agree to the propofal, and I acquainted Mr. Reading, who was not a little pleafed with it, and told me, that, for his part, he was very ready to do all he could to promote our defign, without any fuch view; though he faid that he thould be glad to fee it prefented to the library, as it was a work which he much approved as far as we had gone, the chronology excepted, to which he thought that of the learned Ufher vaftly preferable. I told him I was wholly of his. opinion, and was forry Mr. Sale had ever fixed upon this, but that it was done before I was concerned in the work, and could not now be retrieved, at leaft in this firft edition, but by the readers making up the difference either in their mind or with the pen. I added, that I had reafon to believe, that if the work came ever to be reprinted we hould exchange it for that of Archbihiop Uher, as we have actually done. However, as foon as the firft part of the Jewifh hiftory was printed off, I took a little recefs among fome of my X
friends

## ( 306 )

friends in Hampfhire, where I compleated my next tafk, viz. the hiftory of the Celtes and the Scythians, and as I had the free ufe of feveral libraries there, I faved the proprietors the charge of buying thofe books I was fure to find in any of them, and as foon as I found by the public papers, that the firf volume was publifhed, wrote a letter to put them in mind of their promife of prefenting one of them to Sion College library; but I was much furprifed at my coming to town, to find that they had abfolutely refolved againft it, on pretence that it might hinder many clergymen from buying it, if they could have the reading of it there. I tried in vain to forewarn them that I fhould want moft of the fame fcarce and chargeable books, befides a number of others, for the writing the fecond part of the Jewih hiftory, in a fubfequent volume, in which cafe they could not expect that I hould agfin have recourfe to my good friend Mr. Rending but muft of neceffity be at the expence of buying them; they chofe to run the hazard . of it , and. I took care not to fpare them in one of them, when it came to the point.

From

## ( 307 )

From thefe few inftances, the reader may eafily guefs that the then partners were not quite fo folicitous for the credit of the work, as might have been wihed, confidering how well it took by this time. But I muft in juftice to them acquaint him, that (befides the great difficulties they laboured under to procure proper hands to go on with it, and for which I refer him to what I have faid in the dedication and preface to the laft volume of the folio edition) they had met with many unexpected and confiderable loffes; fome of the newly engaged authors, for inftance took up pretty round fums before-hand, and never wrote a line of the part they had undertaken; others, even among the old ones, wrote theirs in fuch a carelefs manner as not to be fit to appear in print, when they came to be examined by the reft, and yet were paid the fame to the full as if their copy hadd paffed mufter, though the whole was to be done again de novo, and the retarding of the work was an additional lofs to the proprietors. I will add, that I have fince known near twenty fheets of the beginning of the Byzantine hiftory, done by

## ( 308 )

a judicious hand, and printed off, yet condemned to wafte paper chiefly becaufe it was fpun to too great a length, which was ftill a much greater lofs. The truth is, that the author of the Roman hiftory, having wire-drawn it to above three times the length it was to have been, there was an abfolute necefity of curtailing that of the Conftantinopolitan emperors, to prevent the work fwelling into an enormous bulk; and he himfelf hath abridged it in fuch a manner as hath quite marred it, fince the reader will find moft reigns contained in as many fhort paragraphs as they would have required fheets, which is fo much the greater lofs to the public, inafmuch as the Roman hiftory being fo well knowni, and written by fo many hands, was the fitteft to have been thus epitomifed; whereas the Byzantine, though equally - curious and inftructive, is fo little known, that it ought to have been writtgn in a more copious manner, efpeciall as it abounds with the moft interefing inctaents to the church as welf as the flate. So that the author hath done in both refpects the'

## ( 309 )

the very reverfe of what he ought to have done.
The reader may, from the inflances above mentioned, fuppofe perhaps, that we the authors kept conflantly to our meetings and examining each part in a body, as we ufed to do at firf, fetting out, a method of the greateft confequence towards the carrying on fuch a work, and which the proprietors were not wanting in generofity to promote; but we foon found the new comers fo averfe to continue it, or fubmit the review of their copy to the old ones, that they either abrented themfelves from our meetings, or elfe condefcended only to anfwer "fuch queftions as were afked therh by the old ones concerning their fixing any point of hiftory, which had a connection with that of another nation; as the Macedonians and Greeks, for infance, done by two or three hands, to prevent our clafhing with each other about uncertain or controverted facts; in evely refpect, they infifted on going of each in his own way, as they were, they told us, fufficiently acquainted with the fubject they had in hand. By this means it was that they indulged themfelves in the

## (.310)

liberty of going beyond their bounds, and fwelling each part to double the bulk agreed on, by often repeating the fame common facts in each feparate hiftory, which we had agreed fhould be related at length but in its proper place, whilft every other occafion that offered for freh mention of them, was to be only referred to that, either as promifcua to follow in the fequel, or as a reference to what hath already been faid. For, we had from the beginning agreed upon this method, that nothing fould be related at length concerning the hiftory of any nation or country, but what was tranfacted within the boundaries of it ; and that the wars, conquefts, \&c. which were carried on abroad, thould be mentioned chiefly in the hiftory of thofe countries where they. were made; to do otherwife, would be, as was hinted at the beginning of the firft volume, treating thofe conquered nations with the fame arbitrary contempt and neglect as their conquerors had formerly done: Thus, for inftance, it was refolved that Alexander's hiftory ihould be confined to Macedonia, and his other conquefts referred

## ( 3II)

ferred to that of thofe nations he fubdued; that that of the Romans, fhould be confined within the limits of Italy, and their new lawlefs acquifitions referred to the hiftory of the Gauls, Germans, Spaniards, Carthaginians, \&c. that were to follow. This would at once have effectually cut off all needlefs repetitions, with which the work hath been fwelled beyond its, defigned length; without docking the hiftory of any nation, as we have been fince forced to do, to avoid falling into the fame fault in which the writers of the feveral Greek hiftories have fallen, where the reader may fee the fame facts related over and over in the hiftories of the Macedonians, Athenians, Spartans, \&cc. not without fome vifible and unjuftifable variations, all which might eafily have been avoided, had the authors kept within the rules abovementioned. But no one hath fhewn a greater difregard to them, than the author of the Roman hiftory who hath fwallowed up all the zahappy nations that fell into thofe conquerors clutches without diftinction, and expatiated with the fame diffufenefs on their -hiftory without, as he hath in that within X 4
their

## ( 312 )

their territories, which though fome of our readers have approved of, as it gives a more connected hiftory of that nation, a thing fo much the lefs needful in a work of this extenfive nature, as we have it written in a body by fo many different hands, yet hath been highly difliked by the far greater, and I may add the more judicious part of them, as contrary to our plan and engagements to the public, and to the nature of an Univerfal Hiftoty,* wherein that of every nation, thould be found fully difplayed, and every fact confined to its proper fcene of action. It was to the neglect of attending to, or rather keeping up to this original defign, that we muft afcribe two confiderable defects in the work, againft which our readers have juftly complained. The one, that fome hiftories, as for inftance, that of the Carthaginians, had been fraught with an unneceffary repetition of all their wars with the Romans, or which had been already fully related in the Roman hiftory, to the fwelling of the work beyond its due limits; the other, that to avoid that inconveniency and charge to the purchaters, thofe of the Gauls, Germans and Spaniards..

## ( 313 )

are truncated, and their wars with, and reduction by the Romans are barely referred to what hath been faid in the Roman hifftory, where they are fcattered and fo interfperfed with that of other nations, that it cannot be called a regular and compleat hiftory of them. And what is this but abrorbing all there brave natipns by the lump, into that of their tyrannic.conquerors; and how could $I$, to whofe lot the hiftory of thofe three ancient nations fell, avoid it by any other way, but that of recapitulating all afrefh, in the moft compendious manner I could, to avoid fwelling the work and referring the reader to the volume and page of the Roman hiftory, where the facts are mentioned at length. And there was by that time the more caufe to abridge all thefe needlefs repetitions, becaufe the purchafers, and after them the bookfellers, had juftly complained, how vaftly the work was already fwelled beyond the bounds to which we haç promifed to confine it. But this was not fo readily complied with by the reft, who having finifhed each their refpective hikories, according to the plan and method agreed upon, and mentioned above,

## ( 314 )

and either did not dream that the writer of the Roman hiftory would go contrary, or when they found he had, did refent it too much to fuffer their own to be truncated on his account, infifted upon their being printed at full length, and with all their repetitions. And this the bookfellers were forced to fubmit to, for fear not only of difobliging the authors, but likewife of retarding the regular publication of the volumes. But what will eafily convince the reader, as it hath me long fince, how much more earneft the writer of the Roman hiftory was to promote his own ignoble intereft, at the expence of the proprietors as well as the credit of the work, is, that when he came afterwards to write the fecond part of the hiftory of the Perfians, he hath res peated at length all their wars with the eaftern emperors, together with all the other facts and incidents that paffed between them, at full length, inftead of referring to what he had formerly faid in the Byzantine hiftory; for this plainly thews that the dulcis odor lucri, more effectually infíuenced him than all the çomplaints of the proprietors and purchafers, which laft were be-n

## ( $3^{15}$ )

come fo rife that we thought it neceffiry to publifh fomething by way of excufe for this excefs of bulk, and at the fame time to make the beft appology. we could for that and other deviations from our original plan, without difcovering the caufes they were owing to, which would have rather helped to difcredit the work in the eye of the world, which did not dream how little unanimity there was in our 'proceedings, and how impoffible it was for the beft inclined of us to keep fuch felfinh firits as were then employed, within the bounds prefcribed. I hall now give a farther inftance of it , and fuch a pregnant one, as will convince the reader that fuch a work as this could never be carried on fairly, and according toour promife, notwithftanding all our care and precaution, even in the fecond impreffion of the work; how much lefs poffible mult it have been, to have done fo in the firt.
But thère was fill a greater inconvenience - -refotifing from thefe repetitions, and the monftrous bulk of the Roman hiftory, and by that time the feventh volume was finihed,
finifhed, the public began to think we defigned to fpin the work to nine or ten, for there were ftill a great number of ancient kingdoms and countries to be defcribed, according to our original defign, fuch as the Mohammedan hiftory, and other nations interwoven with it, confifting of above twenty articles in Mr. Sale's plan, moft of them of fuch hard names as few readers were acquainted with, befides the kingdoms of the great Mogul and other parts of India, thofe of Siam, China, Japan, Tartary, Ruffia ' both in Europe and Afia, the Turkilh empire in both, and the whole country of America; all which could hardly be contained in lefs than two volumes at the leart. However, by that time the feventh volume was publifhed, the proprietors met with fo little encouragement to go on from the purchafers, and were already fuch confiderable lofers, that they thought fit to ftop there, and leave the work thus maimed and imperfect; but what not only determined, but is lome meafure forced them to it, was their having the mortification foon after, to fee their property invaded by three different pyratical bookfellers

## ( 317 )

tookfellers of Dublin, who, as they were not at any other charge than printing and paper, both which are much cheaper in Ireland than here, could well enough afford it to the public for half the price that ours fold for at London, and unknown to each other reprinted the work there word for word, two of them in folio and the third in octavo, and when each of them came to underftand that the like pyracy had been committed by the other two, fell foul againft each other in their advertifements, in fuch language and opprobrious names as all three juftly deferved. As therefore fuch a piece of flagrant injuftice could not but greatly affect the original proprietors, who were already fo. confiderably lofers, it could not be expected that they fhould run the manifeft hazard of throwing away more money in purfuit of their plan. We were therefore obliged to frame another kind of excufe for their dropping it, viz. Ythat thofe countries and kingdoms nor fpeken of in the foregoing volumes, - being of fater difcovery, fuch as India, Cbina, \&c.in Afia, a great part of Africa, "and the new American world, they would

## ( $3{ }^{18}$ )

be more properly defcribed, and their hifto: ries begun and continued in the modern part, which they wisre however no farther refolved to go on with, than as they found a probability of its meeting more encouragement than the old had hitherto done. So that they had now time to think on fome proper means of fuppreffing the three pyrated impreffions as far as poffible, by expofing them to the public as they jufty deferved, and propofing to give the world a. new and more correct edition of the whole in octavo, together with additions of fuch material points as had been omitted in the former.
When this fecond impreffion came to beg sefolved on, both the authors and proprietors, fenfible of the many mifcarriages of the former, for want of our following our firf plan, did unanimoufly agree among other things, that every one of us in the revifing, correcting, and improving each our refpective parts, fhould oblige oerfelves, fo far to ftick clofe to it for the luture, that all the unneceffary repetitions thould be refcinded, and every hiftorical fact ke, confined to the hiftory of that country in
which

## ( $3 \times 9$ )

which it was tranfacted, and no where mentioned at length bpt there; as the conqueft of Sicily in the kiftory of that Inand, of Carthage in that of the Republic, of the Spaniards, Gauls, sec. in that of thofe nations, which was the only way of making every one of them compleat, and at the fame time fhorten the work, by the avoiding all needles(r. repetitions. And this we not oṇly promifed, but bound ourfelves in writing to perform ; however to make the point till more fure, as I had reafon to doubt an unahimous compliance to the agreement from one quarter, I further propofed that no part fhould go to the prefs, till it had been examined and approved by the reft. ; This was accordingly oppofed by the party I füfected under feveral fecious pretences, fuch as taking up too much time, as we lived at fome diftance from each other, the danger of millaying or lofing fome of the copy, and having now and then folne alteration in controverted points, all which might retard if not hinder the work; upôn which the proprietors thought firto give it up, and to depend upon our honour for the exact performance of our

## ( 320 )

egreement. However, as he hath hardly in one fingle inflance kept up to it, but hath reprinted, not only his own Roman hiftory, but feveral other parts done formerly by other hands, and now committed to his care by the bookfellers, almof verbatio from the firf edition, to the no fmall trouble of, and damage to the other authors who had filled up thefe unneceffary chafms in their refpective. parts, which he fhould have ftruck out of his own, and have been fince obliged to erafe all thofe additions; he hath fufficiently convinced every one of us what his views were in fo ftrenuoully oppofing my propofal, and confequently how impoffible it is. for fuch a defign as this to be rightly executed, unlefs the whole care and revifal be left to one fingle perfon of ability equal to it. The thing is now paft all remedy with refpect to this fecond edition, though it may be eafily rectified in every refpect in a future one, if any fuch nay ever, find encouragement. But the wrongtione to the public in this fecond, is the more confiderable, through the unfairnefs of the. author above mentioned, in as much as,
though

## ( 32 i )

though he is the only one concerned, that hath not complied with our articles, he has by his fubdulous artifice had the far greater fhare in the work committed to him. And I think I have the greater right to complain of his breach of promife, and the difcredit he hath brought on us and the work, as I can: make it appear that neither in the firft nor fecond edition, I have ever departed from our original plan, in any of thofe parts I have bêen engaged in, nor inferted any thing in them except by way of promiffam or reference, that properly belonged to another. And for the truth of this I mall only appeail to there parts, a lift of which I fiall, in juftice to my own character, now give to the reader.
I. The Jewifh hiftory, from Abraham, to the Babylonih captivity.
2. The hiftory of the Celtes and Scythians.
3. The ancient hiftory of Greece, or the fabulous and heroic times.
4. The ifquel of the Jewih hiftory, from the retern from Babylon, to the defruction of Jerualem-by Titus.
5. The hiftory of the ancient Empires of Nice and Trebizon.

## (i322),

6. The biftory of the ancient Spaniards.

7v. Of the Ganuls.
8. Of the ancient Germans.

In the fecond edition, wherein we endeavoured to fupply all the material omiffions in the firt, the following parts came to my: flate, viz.

1. The fequel of the Theban, and Corinthian hiftory.
$20:$ The Retreat of Xenophen.
2. The continuation of the Jewifh hiftory, from the deftruction of Jerufalem by Titus, to this prefent time.
I mult here obferve with refpect to the laft offthefe, that it had been promifed in our plat from the very beginning, but had beer deferred, as more properly belonging to the modern hiftory; upon which feveral of our fublcribers and correfpondents complained of the omifion, as it is a fubject not only cutious and inftructive, but likewife little known, and therefore much wanted; upon Which we had agreed to fatisfy their dethand, and to have inferted it attie end of the fecond part of the Jewinh or the, Roman hiftory; and I had accordingly-prepared it for the prefs againft that time, and

## ( $3^{23}$ )

beftowed full fix months in the writing of it, befides what I had fpent before in collecting fuch curious materials as fell in my way; fo that the copy, which will make about fifteen or fixteen Sheets of the octavo. edition; hath been a good white in the hands of the proprietors, and as I had reafon to expect, would have been printed before now in the fifteenth "or fixteenth volume, of which I had apprifed feveral of my correfpondents, as well as thofe of my acquaintance who enquired, after it. But to my furprife, the proprietors have fince de-- termined to poftpone it till the Modern Hiftory comes out, as it brings the hiftory of the Jewifh nation down to the prefent time, which no other in the work doth, and can have no place in the Antient. But the real caufe was the want of room, the work being like to fwell beyond the number of volumes promifed in their propofals. The truth is they being in fome meafure obliged) o include it within the compafs of twent or at moft twenty-one volumes, in order tofupprefs the pyratical Irifh edition (which was promifed to be contained Y 2 within

## ( 344 )

within that number, though without any probability (or perhaps defign) of their fo doing, if one may guefs by the bulk of each of thofe volumes that have been publifhed) there was a neceffity of reducing matters within a narrower compafs. And this upon a frict computation might have been eafily done, notwithftanding the feveral additions that were to be made to the work, had all the needlefs repetitions been refcinded, the fyyle made more concife, and a great number of fuperfluous facts, circumftances, difquiftions, and controverfies, moft of them ufelefs and incompatible with the nature of fo estenfive a work, been flruck out of both the text and notes, as we had agreed hould be done by every one in his refpective parts, and hath been patually done by all but one, and him the perfon who had the largeft thare in the revifing and contracting of the work; fo that through his neglect and noncompliance, the work hat fwelled not only much beyond our compatations but would have done much more fo, had not the proprietors from a laudable defire of keeping up as much as could poffibly be

$$
(325)
$$

be done to the firt propofals; not only generoully thrown in five or fix fheets extraordinary into every volume, but likewife enlarged every page both in the length and number of the lines, by which each volume from the fourth downwards, may be juftly, faid to contain betwèen fix or feven theets more of natter than was originally. propofed, or than the third or fourth contained. And this I am bound to mention in juftice to them, becaufe though they were confiderable lofers by the firft edition, they yet chofe to put themflves to this extraordinary expence, rather than incur the charge of impofing upon the public, by the unexpected addition of three or four 'volumes more than they had engaged to comprife the whole work in. Howeyer, ! cannot but be forry that thefe confiderations fhould be looked upion as a fufficinet pretext for their fuppreffing that fequel of the Jewifh hiftory I have been fpeaking of, contraly to the original plan of the work, ank the expectation of to many of its entruragerso And I do purpofely take notice of ir, that in cafe I can not prevail upon them to print it at the end of the work, $\mathrm{Y}_{3}$ and

## ( 326 )

and leave it at the option of fubifribers, either to buy or leave it, the public may know where the fault lies, and that my friends may not lay it at my door.
Thus much may fuffice for the hiftory of this work, and to account for the great imperfections of the firft edition, and for the fecond not turning out better thas. it hath; and I doubt not, when the reader confiders all thefe things he will be apt rather to wonder, as I bave often done; that it is come out fo well as it is. I have no intention, much lefs any caufe to reflect on the proprietors of the work, efpecially thote who'are become fo fince the deaths or failure of moft of the old ones. They have fpared fieither pains nor coft towards its improve-trient, hor been wanting in generofity to the authors. They never once difputed wirt me about the price If fet upon my labour, hor refafed "to fupply me with fuch - fuums as I drew upoṇthem for. This is indeed more than I'can or ought to fay o the old fet of theri, Tome of whom :often put us. to great dificulties by their fordidnefs anul fruitudil jealoufies dnd mifunderftandings, all which $f$ with pleafure obferyed to vanim

## ( 327 )

upon the coming in of whis new fet. It is true that as ifar as related tome, they always found me diligentand punetual; I performed the parts I undertook to the bett of my ability, and being content with a moderate gan, could beftow the more time and laboü? upon thetr, and always took care to have them finifhed at the time tequired ; and ro wholly, and I may add cördilly, was I ins tent upont the work in general, that I would never engage in any othor whitlethat lafted: And this they were fo' far ${ }^{3}$, ${ }^{2}$ atisfied of, atd To entirely relied on me, that whether in town or country, I have been athowed to drawn upon Mr. Millar, fóp fome footes of pounds biefore hand, which were punctuially anfwefed by him, though neither he nor any of the partiders ever saw any of my copy tillit went to the prefs; and when printed off paid the fưt'rlis with uncommon generofity, for Iatuyystojk cate to keep within cormpafs: 'This tháy look like vanity for me to "fay of my felf, but as it will not be made public till aftet my death, When I Tallibe out of the way of teaping any fatifaction from it, bure the confcióuf-


## ( 328 )

as this hath been my conftant method with all the bookfellers with whom I have been concerned, and for this I dare appeal to all who have employed me, I am the lefs fcrupulous about anym finifter conftruction a cenforious reader may put upon it; thofe whọ have known me and my converfation for: much above thefe twenty years, .will I hope pafs a more candid judgment upon it.
However, with refpef to the management of the partners about this fecond edition, I cannot but obferve that they were guilty of two fatal errors. The firlt in com: mitting fo great a chare of the work, as well as the revifal of the whole to a man, who they had all reafon to believe aimed chiefly at gain and difpatch, and to agree with him by the lump as they did, which would only prove a temptation to him to hurry it off as faft as he could, and as he accordingly did, to their no fmall mortification, as well as hurt to themfelves and the work. I' might add, that as he we and owned himfelf quite unacquainted wirky the eaftern languages, he was the moft unqualified for feveral parts that fell to ${ }^{\circ}$ his

## ( 329 )

his lot of any and if. care had not been taken would have committed fuch miftakes in the very felling of proper names, as wauld quite have difcredited it.
The other was their engaging to publifh a volume monthly, and beginning to publifh before they had a fufficient number ready printed before hand, tọ have enabled them to keep up to their time; the want of which precaution hath fince obliged them to have feveral volumes on the anvill at different preffes at once, and to be difpatched with fuch precipitation that the compofitors have overlooked many litteral errors' which had been corrected by the authors, and which is Aill worfe, this hath likewife made it impoffible for us to make the proper and neceffary references from one volume to the other as they were printed at the fame time, and not regularly one after anothers as they fhould have done, fo that in fonse cafes we could hardly refer to the oolume much lefs to the page; but the reader-will find many inftances of this lat?

I hall

## ( 330 )

I. thall now give fome few ureful hints how this work may be made compleat in a future edition by one fingle hand, if equal to the taifk; firft, let whoever undertakes it read it all over again attentively and regularly, one volume after another, and as he reads, common-place every thing, perfon, fact, 8 cc . as if he defigned it for a compleat and copious index. Let him not depend upon that general one which is teady made to his hand, at the end of the work, and where all there needlers repetitiöns, inconfiftences, and contradictions may be: artfully omitted or concealed, but either make.a full and exact one de novo, or at leaft confult the printed one upon every point he reads over, and mark downo every fuch omifion or concealment; though were it my cafe I hould rather prefer the former, becaufe there will be the lefs. labour lof, as it will ftand ready for fuch when the workcomes to be reprinted, and he will have effetwards nothing to do but add the printed spages to every 'article as they coing in rcourfe, only.if it fhould be deensed too fury he may frike out afterwards fuch as aptpear sof lefs moment. But he will find
. this

## ( 33 F ;

this fingular benefit by such an exact coms mon-placing of every thing, that it will difcover to him at once revery incedlefs. repetition, every incorififtency and contra+ diction as he reads on, which the may at the fame time mark down in the margin of the book, in order to correect them onthe fecond reading; He may, then fet down likewife in the margin, the volume and'page where the rame'thing is tola before, where it is differently related or fet fin adifferent light, and in cafes that adiait a. difpute, by confulting the :original atuthors, be able to judge which lis right or intoltupröbable:.. Thus for initance, when We finds the wery Game facts related in the Hiftories of Sicily, Rome and Cathage, he will eafily lknow whère they oúght to have 'beèn fêt down' at length, 'narkely, where the fcene of action háppehed; Ghd where "only to be referred to it, viz. In" the other two. So that whatever either the Romats or Carthaginithes tranfacted fin Sicily, thould - be finly promifedior referred: to, an their Aiftory and londy. related at full dength in that "of the Sicilians $\dot{s}$ and for of the reft. FHe will likewife by IGeh ahandex find

## ( $33^{2}$ )

out where any facts or tranifactions have been differently related or reprefented by each of their writers, who muft of courfe be fuppored, and will upon trial be found to clafh often, for want of frequently conferring: with each other, or duly confulting and examining, or perhaps fome times of rightly yndertanding the original authors they pretend to follow.
By this means ' he will likewife be able to difcover many facts related in one place, which more properly belong to, or might be more conveniently transferred to another, and place them fo accordingly in his marginal notes. By that time he hath common-placed the whole fet of volumes, he will be likewife able to difcover every material.omiffion under every article, either from his own memory and reading, or by turning to the index of fuch books as treat of the fame fubject, and be able to fupply every fuch defect from them, : Thus in the articles of nations, as Jews, Edyptians, Romans, \&cc. or of cities, as Jerundem. Alexandria, Rome, \&cc. if he firds anyd thing material, which not being in his gommon-place book makes him conclude

## ( 333 )

it was omitted in the work, he will likewife eafily fupply from thofe, authors and their indexes, and the fame may be done by the articles of namés of kingdoms, provinces, monarchs, \&c. by furnifhing himfelf with the beft modern authore :who have wrote of them, and fupplying each with every thing he finds wanting in his . own common-place book, as well as exchange fome lefs material trifles that are in this, for more momentous ones he will find in them, all which may be done. with little trouble, and he will fill referve to himfelf the liberty of the difference in controverted points he will meet with among thofe moderns, by having recoufe to the original ones; for he muft make it a ftanding rule to himfelf, not to rely on the former which are more copious than exact; without confulting the latter, and where thofe differ among themfelves as they often do, to ufe all proper helps either to reconcile them, or to chufe the more probable fide
This vould have been the method I hould have taken, had I had any fhare in the revifing any' other but my own particu-

## ( 334 );

lar parts in the work; tha' I muff till hate thought it too much for any one to have. revifed the whole, and fhould have thought it neceffary to have imparted the above mentioned rules to the reft, in order to have enabled them tohave reCtified every mittake, contraft, and jarring, between their parts. For as I knew that all the hopes of the: proprietors, was, in a fecond, and more correct edition, to reimburfe the loftes they: had füftained by the firft; I bad their confent to compofe: the index to each of the volumes, (the firf excepted, which was. done by the fame hand that wrote the Roman hiftory, and juntly condemned for: its. unneceflary length and verbofity) by which I could obferve as I read along; and marked in the margin of the leaves, every. needjefs repetition, fuperfluity, contrariety, omiffion, tranifpofition, \&c. that would be neceflary to make the next impreffion more compleat, efpecially when I came to make the general one to the whole; and wads the better inabled by it, to refcinuand alter what I found amifs or fuperflyous in ? thofe parts that came more immediately under my care, though I have had fince

## ( 335.)

reafon to think I have gone too far in it, and out of complaifance to the proprietors, who complained that my Jewifh hiftory was too diffufe for a work of this nature, have been prevailed on to ftrike out in this fecond edition many curious things, which I have fince found had been very well liked and approved of in the firf. But without fuch refcifions it was impofble to bring the whole within the compafs propofed, efpecially as they were fo much negleited in feveral other parts of the work, which would at leaft as conveniently admit of them, fuch as the Dynaftes of the Egyptians, the hiftory of Perfia from the oriental writers, and many other fuch fabulous abfurdities. However, I cannot accufe myfelf of having fuppreffed any thing that was of moment in that hiftory; though feveral perhaps, and to my no fmall regres; which would have been acceptable to the curious in that kind of learning. As for all fhe other parts within my province, I buive rather enlarged and improved them with reew proofs, obfervations and curious ädditions, as may be eafily found by comparing the two editions together

## ( 336 )

With relation to the defiderata in both editions, I cannot forbear taking notice that the ancient hiftory of the northern nations, fuch as Mofcovy, Pioland, Sweden, Denmark, Norway, \&c. hath bèen altogether omitted except fome few hints that have been given in that of the Scythians and Celtes, intimating only that the former were originally defcended from the latter. It is indeed commonly believed that thefe remote nations have no records of their ancient times, but I had a fingular opportunity of being convinced of the contrary; by a learned gentleman who was a profeffor of hiftory, \&cc. in the univerity of Abbo in Norway, but came to London mofly every fummer as an agent from the king of Sweden, and among other new books, ufed to buy feveral fetts of the Univerfal Hiftory for that Prince, for count Coningfegg, and other great perfons in that kingdom. This gentleman having expreffed a defire to Mr. Symons his bookfeller, and one of the proprietors, of onverfing with one of the authoss, particularly with that of the Jewih hiftory, we foon came acquainted together, and upon

## ( 337 )

thy enquiring of him aftet fuch records or monuments of thofe northern nations on which one might compile their ancient hiftory; gave me fuch a fatisfactory account, 'as made me' perfuade Mr. Symon, and the other partners, to engage him to undertake it , which he, with fome difficulty, ${ }^{\text {agireed }}$ to ${ }^{*}$ do, tiotwithflanding his other ayocations. I had the pleafure of feeing bimi every time he came to Loridon, "and to hear how well he proceeded iñ the work'; and accordingly in about three years he brought a large and elaborate account of all the northern nations and countries, their origin; ancient 'fettlements, hiffory, : \&è. with many curious obfervations on their geographys:natural hiftory, and the whole backed with fuch: good authorities and proofs, as one would hardly have expected from fuch barren climes, and was recommended by feveral of the moft learned men in Sweden and Norway, who had the perufal, of even contributed to fome part or other of it $f$
'This chapter; which, according to our original plad, was to have preceded the ir-ruptionof the Huns, Goths, Vandals, Suevi Z and

## ( $33^{8}$ )

and Ginte: the fouthern parts of Europe; would have given a much better and clearer actounc of thefe barbafous inations, than that- which hath been given in the fiftory of 1 ,heir . new . fettlements in flungary; Italys:France, Spain, \&xc. The misfortune was $s_{s j}$ that it proved too bulky (though nothing could be faid to be fuperfluous or impertinent in it) it, being compated to ampunt to above feyenty folio heets, for which-they could: not:find room, bur:work being:atready fwolen wanty beyondititibulk; foffhat D5. Sidenius, that was: the learned author's: name; had, the mortification of having that curious parter refufed by the proprietors, ;and, returned upon his hands; the old ones, as Mefs. Symon :and Batley? being dead, and the reft; except Min. Of: bornerin Grays-Inn, being. gone off, and the newi. ones. not, hooking jupon themerelves concerped in -the agreement. And this. I mention with no fóall regret; becaufe it was a confiderable lofs to the learned world, as well as to the author, and fuch as I-much fear will hardy ybe ever recovared. $\because$ :
In the intertyal betuveen the conclufion of the firft, and the refolution of printing the fec nid,

## ( 339 )

fecond, I was invited into a hare of the new Syftem of Geography, in which though the Pablic foundijuft fault with the extravagant length of that which related to Great Britain and Ireland, I yet found the authors concerned in it, fo well qualified for the work, fo communicative and punctual in their regular meetings once a fortnight, that I readily caime into it, and found with pleafure the work carried on with more unanimity, exactnefs, and to the fatiffaction of the proptietors, as well as of the public. The parts 1 did in that work were thofe that follow. ' i. Spain, Portugal and the illands beloonging to them.' 2. Italy, Savoy, Piedmont, and the iflands of Sicily, Sardinia, Corfica, : \&cc. 3: Murcovy both in Europe and Afia. 4. Turky in Afia. 5. In Afia, China, Japan, Jetzo, and the. jflands along thofe coafts, particularly that of Formofa, which part I chofe, that Imight take occafion publickly to acknowledge, as jttwere by a third hand, the falfhood and impofture of my former account 'of that ifland. 6. In Africa, the kingdoms of Egypt, Abyfinia, Lybia, Barbary, i. Tripoli, Tunis, Morocco, Fez, with an Z 2 account

## ( $34^{\circ}$ )

account of the Mediterranean Sea, and the famed river of Sanaga. 7. The Azores inlands. 8."In"America, the countries of Brafil, Magellan, Terra del Fuego, Canada, Louifiana, and the Bahamas and Bermudas iflands. And by the time I had concluded thefe laft, I was called upon to prepare my refpective" parts of the Univerfal Hiftory, for the fecond impreffion mentipned above. I have however found fufficient reafon to complain of the wrong management of this work in feveral refpects, though otherwife carried on with greater exactnefs and unanimity than that of the Univerfal Hiftory, and I fhall now take the liberty of mentioning fome of the moft confiderable ones,' becaufe they have: been the caufe of fome unavoidable errors and blunders, not only in the two above mentioned works, but in moft others that have been publifhed in the fame or near the fame way. The firft is the authors being tied to produce fach a number of fheets in fo fhort a time as is almoft incompatible with their defire, if any fuch they have, of performing theis: refpective parts with any exactnefs; for, though the publifhers feldom fail of acquainting

## ( 34i-)

quainting the public that the work is either already, or pretty near fnilhed and ready for the prefs, fo that theres. is tho danger of its meeting with alyy delay or impediment, yet that is feldom if ever the cafe, and with refpect to the works I am fpeaking of, I found it quite the reverfe, and that they have frequently been fent to the prefs, under the promife of being regularly publifhed, by fuch a number of fheetsevery week or month, when fearcely a fourth part of it was written. So that, to prevent the retarding of the work; they have been obliged to call in for new helps, whom they have obliged to engage to perform their part in lefs than half the time, that it would have reafonably required; confidering that they not only had it all to begin and go through in that fhort fpace, as was the cafe in this new Syftem of Geography, but that fome of them were likewife engaged in fome other work, between which and this, they were forced to divide their time and diligence, though either of them did more than require it all; and how could it be poffible for either to be performed as it ought?

Z 3 Another

## ( 342~)

Another mifmanagement from the beginning was, the interlarding every fourth or fifth number with a fet of maps which indeed gave fome breathing time to the authors, but then it confined them to receive all their directions concerning the - limits, fituation, longitude, latitude, diftances, 8 cic. from thofe maps, which being fuch as the engraver rather than the authors had made choice of, as the moft authentic in his opinion, were not always fo judicioully chofen as could have been wifhed. This made many errors remedilefs and irretrievable, becaufe the greateft part of thofe maps had been publifhed in fuch numbers, feveral months before the authors were called upon to begin the geography of thofe countries. This I often complained of to the proprietors from the beginning, both as a great overfight and a hardihip upon the authors, who $_{3}$ inftead of being allowed to direct the engraver in the choice or compiling of them, were obliged to follow himimplicitly, and often contrary to their own opinion and liking, in thofe which he had thought fit to pitch upon for our guide. Thus in the 1

## ( 343.)

map of Japan, for inftance, the land of Jetzo is affirmed to be the fame with Cumfchatta, though contrary to fact, it not being fo much as part of fit. I might add likewife, that thofe maps confined us to the: orthography of places, though very often erroneous, or being of foreign extract, conveyed a wrong found of the name to an Englifh ear.
But the moft confiderable mifmanagement was in the choice of fuch printers as bore indeed the greateft fway and intereft, and who confequently had fuch a glut of bufinefs, that every thing was difpatched with. theutmoft hurry and precipitation, in order to. keep up to their time. This never failed caufing a great deal of confufion and incorrectness in the printing, particularly in the othography of proper names, and giving the authors a great deal of trouble in correcting the proofs, which, however, was but too often of no fervice, through the hurry the compofitors were in, which made them overlook and often neglect thofe cor-Frections.- Ttfrequently happened likewife, that they required fuch a quick difpatch of the author, in correcting the fheets, that 2.4 they

## (i 344 )

they had not time enough to read them over with that carefulnefs they would otherwife haze done; fo that they themfelves could not avoid overlooking even fome material errors in the fpelling, but moft chiefly in the numbers and figures. As for me, it being my conftant role not to be engaged in two works at once, I never would let a proof go out of my hands, without a fecond, and, in fome cafes, a third reading, but I have often found that. I might as well have faved my felf that labour, fince the correctors or compofitors had not time enough left to make the proper emendations, and fometimes have fent the fheet to the prefs before the proof hath been returned.
To prevent this unfair dealing, as I may jufly call it, or at leaft to lay the blame at the right door, I had taken a method of infifing upon having two proofs, of each fheet, fent me from the prefs, under pretence of keeping one of them by me, to refer to when it was requifite, but in fact by correcting both proofs alikeonn the margin, to be able to produce that which I kept by me, againft both the compofitor, : - and

## ( 345 )

and corrector, when ever they were guilty of any fuch neglect. But as foon as my defign was found out by thems fome plaufible excufes were made, for not continuing to fend duplicates, and I was forced to give up that point, unlefs I had a mind to difablige the very mafter printers, who were fome of the richeft, and bore the greateft fway. with the proprietors, and had already deprived us, under the pretence of difpatch, of the privelege of revifing our copy, after our firft correction. This laft indeed wwas denied us, on account of the unreafonable trouble, which one of the authors too frequently gave them, in thofe revifes at the firft fetting out; wha did often require three or four of them, and every one laaded with new, and mofly needlefs alterations, which took up fo much of the compofitors time that they wereiobliged to complain of it. This was, though true with refpect to one author, but a poor pretence for depriving the reft of the liberty,of one fingle revife, which they chiefly-filifted on, not fo much to make any neceffary alterations, as only to be fatisfied that none of their corrections were

## ( 346 )

overlooked. However, the point was overruled by the printers; and that material check being taken off from the compofitors, the literal errors multiplied fo faft upon us, efpecially in the words and quotations out of the eaftern languages, that we were obliged to take notice only of fuch as were of the greateft moment in the table of errata of the firft edition, and to curtail as many of thofe foreign words as we could in the fecond, efpecially thofe of the Arabic, Hebrew, and Syriac kind.
Thefe are fome of the principal caufes of that incorrectnefs which commonly, I had almoft faid unavoidably, happen in thefe kinds of works, let an author be ever fo defirous and careful to avoid them, unlefs. he hath fo great a fway over the printers, that they dare not refufe him the liberty of revifing his own work as often as he. fees it needful. And the leaft that he can infift on, for his own credit and fatisfaction, is a revifal of every proof after it hath been corrected by him.
I did take occafion to mention a Trete-higher the wrong information which Mr. Palmer gave me concerning Bilhop Hare's Metrical

Paker,

## (. 347 )

Palter, which was, unknown to me, put into Mr. Bowyer's hands to print, whilt I was writing the firft part of the Jewvinh hiftory, and as there had elapfed feveral years between the time, in which Mr. Palmer was lapplied to by Dr. Wafhburn, and that of my becoming in courfe to write on the fub-d ject of the Hebrew • poetry, which had confirmed me in the opinion that the bihhop's defign wasquite Set afide; I made no difficulty to affirm after the generality of the learned writers on that fubject, that the metre of the Hebrew Pfalms and other poetical pieces in the Old Teftament, was looked upon as irretrievably loft, notwithftanding the efforts of fome, and the pretences of athers, who vainly imagined they had or were in the way of recovering it. I backed my opinion with fome new arguments which had occurred to me during my fruitlefs fearch after it, and which appeared to me to carry no fmall force. This part, which was contained in the ninth number of the firft_golume, was fcarcely publifhed, before the -bihop's Pfalter came out. It may be eafily imagined that my curiofity would not permit me to be long without examining
examining that performance, which feemed to overthrow all that I had faid. on that fubject, and fadly was I vexed that my part was publifhed before I had feen this unexpected piece, Had I dreamed of any fuch being fo near coming out, I would ) doubtlefs have fuppreffed mine till I had thereby examined it. What furprifed me moft, and made me entertain fome higher notion of that enterprize, was the long interval which had paffed between the time of its being finifhed and offered to Mrr. Palmer, and that of its being publifhed, which I reckon to have been about fix or feven years, and which I therefore: fuppofed the bifhop and his learned friend $\mathrm{Dr}_{\mathrm{r}} \mathrm{W}-$ - . had fpent in the revifing and polifhing it; but, upon fricter enquiry, I found the caufe of that delay to have been of a different nature, and was as follows. His lordhip had excepted againft Mr. Palmer's Hebrew types, which were of Athias's font, and a little battered, and infifted upon his having a new fett from Mr . Caflon, which greatly exceeded it in beauty. But Mr. Palmer was fo deep in debt to him, that he knew not well how to prozure

## ( 349 )

procure it from him without ready money, twhich he was not able to fpare The bifhop likewife infifted upon having fomeRoman and Italic types cart with fome diftinguifhing mark, to direct his readers to (the Hebrew letters they, were defigned to aniwer, and thefe required a new fett of punches and matrices before they could be. caift, and that would have delayed the work, which Mr. Palmer was in hafte to go about, that he might the fooner finger fome of his lordhip's money. This put him upon fuch an unfair ftratagem, which when difovered, quite difguited his lördhip againf him, viż. reprefenting Mr . Caflon as an idle, dilatory workman, who would in all probability make them wait feveral years for thofe few types, if ever he finifhed them. That he was indeed the only artift that could fupply him with thofe types, but that he hated work, and was not to be depended upon, and therefore advifed his lordhip to make flift with fype fort which he could fubftitute, and would anfwer the fame purpofe, rather than run the rikk of faying fo long, and being perhaps difappointed. The bihop

## ( 350 )

bihop, however, being refolved, if poffible; to have the defired types, fent for Mr. Bowyer, and afked him whether he knew a letter founder that could caft him fuch a fett put of hand, who immediately recommended Mr. Callon ; and, being told what a fad and difadvantageous character he had heard of him, Mr. Bowyer not only affured his lordhip that it was a very falfe and unjuft one, and engaged to get the abovementioned types caft by him, and a new font of his Hebrew ones, in as hort: a time as the thing could poffibly be. done. Mr. Caflon was accordingly fent for by his lordhip, and having made him fenfible of the time the new ones would. require to be made ready for ufe, did produce them according to his promife, and the: book was foon after put to the prefs; and this it was that had fo long retarded its publication.
I was not long without it, and muft own. that his preface, in which his lordmip canfuted, with uncommon learning and keenefs, all the fyftems that hitherto appeared in + public, raifed my expectation to a high degree. For if the metre of the facred book

## ( 35 i )

could but be fuppofed to come up to the loftinefs arid. dignity of' the thoughts and expreffions, (and who could ever have doubted of it, that confidets how much greater gehius the latter requires than the (former?) it muift I thought have greatly excelled that of Homer and Virgil. But how great was my furprife, when upon reading on I found that his lordhip had reduced it to a poor low, crawling humdrum, bitony of triochaics and iambics, or vice verfa as the teader pleafed, and into which he might with eafe', and with much lefs than half: the yariations, maiming and diftortion of the text, have reduced any common profe out. of any language! How much more fill to find in almont every line, words, and fometimes whole verfes mutilated, ftretched out or lopped off, tranfpofed or exchanged ad libitum, in. order tơ bring : them to his ill contrived ftandard! To hear a learned prelate, with all the feeming gravity imaginable, affirm thatthe Heblew poetry, (which by the way - was arriued to fuch, prodigious - heights, with refpect to the grandeur and loftinefs of its figures and imagery, even fo early as

Mofes's
\#1or'rs's time) was even fo low ac in David's ume, fo crude, imperfect and vague, as not to have fo much as a determinate difference between long and fhort fyllables, efpecially confidering to what a heighth of perfection that monarch had improved thel art of mufic; and, what is fill more fur prifing than all the reft, to fee his lordhip, in confequence of this his low conceit of the Hebrew poetry, take fuch pains to marr, deface, and deftroy fome of the moft furprifing, lofty and complicated Ggures and allufions in that facred book, and fuch as far excel all that is to be met with in the Greek and Latin poets. But for thefe I mult refer the reader to what I have ob: ferved of the Hebrew poetry, and on that abfurd performance, in the Univerfal Hiftory (fee vol. iv. of folio edition p. 710 $\mathcal{E} \int$ eq. and notes, and in the octavo one, vol. x. p. 202 © feq. and note (E). The occafion of my being obliged to make thofe animadverfions on it, was as follows. I was fo fhocked at the freedom which . that prelate took to depreciate; muti-' late and vilify fo fublime a fet of the nobleft and moft divine poems, that I thought

## ( 353 )

thought myfelf obliged to write againft him, and to expofe, as they deferved, all his unfair criticifms on it, all his forced emendations, and, above all, the absurdity of his new-difcovered metre; but withal, ( $n$ fuck a respectful manner, as was due to perfon of his character. And in order to that, retired for three months "into Surrey and Hamphire, where I had an opportunity to consult, upon proper occafions, forme of my friends, who were no frangers to that kind of learning. I found the talk the lefs difficult, as I prefently fell in among rome of them, who not only condemned his performance, but had railed already rome very material objections againft it, which they readily communicated to me as foo as they were apprifed of my defign. One of them among the reft had (by way of expofing his lordflip's contemptible metre) reduced the Englifh Lord's Prayer, Creed, Ten Commandments, and the $\mathcal{T}_{e}$ Deum, into the fame crawling meafure; while $I$, who wholly confined myfelf to the Hebrew, had already' done the fame by the first chapter of Genefis, and the lat chapter of

## ( 354 )

Malachi, both which I hrad likewile turned into the fame dull verfe, without - half the deviations from the text, which his lordilip had been forced to make in al-, moft every Pfalm. Some of his very pretended emendations proved fuch, thath the frequency of them directed me td the difcovery of a more elegant metre than he had ever dreamed of, and which convinced me, as they have fince many more Hebraifts, that there was in the metre of the Pfalms, not only a real and fettled diftinction between the long and the fhort fyllables, but that two of the latter were equivalent, in the confituting, of a foot or verfe, to one of the former; fo that they had at leaft three different kinds of feet, viz. long monofyllables, bifyllables, confifting of two long, and trifyllables, confifting of two thort and one long, or vice verfa; but which in the metre anfwered to a fpondee, or two long fyllables. Of this I gave fo mahy inftances, as made me think, contrary to that I had done till then, that the Hebrew metre was not fo irrecoverably loft as I had imagined, and that a little more application than I ..... . . had
had time then, or have had fince to beftow upon it, might go near to recover molt, if not all, the various kinds of it.
However, as foon as I had finifhed what $I$, and fome of míy friends as well as ${ }^{\circ} \mathrm{I}$, hought a fufficient confutation of the Uihop's performance, and in the fame, tho' not fo florid and elegant a Latin, I fent to defire one of my bookfellers to enquire of Mr. Bowyer, whether the new types, calt for his lordrhip, were ftill in his poffeffion? and whether I might be permitted the ufe of them, in the anifwer I had prepared for the prefs? I was anfwered in the affirmative; but one bookfeller took it into his head to afk at the fame time, what number of copies his lord/hip had caufed to be printed of his Pfalter? and was anfwered only five hundred; one half of which. had been prefented by his Lordhip to his learned, friends, both in and out of England, and moft of the reft were ftill unfold, there being but few among the - learned, that were, curious in fuch matters; the performance having been difapproved by all that hadfeen it. This news fo cooled the bookfellers eagernefs after my anfwet,

$$
\text { A } 22 \quad \text { that, }
$$

## (. $35^{6}$ )

- thal, upon my coming to town, and their acquaining me with the ftate of the cale, I was quite difcouraged from printing it. For they concluded from what Mr. Be. . yer had faid, that it would be dangerous to prind above three hundred of mine, the charge of. which being deducted, the profit upon a fuppofition that they were all fold, would be fo fmall, that they could not afford me above two or three guineas for my copy (which would have made about feven or eight (heets of a middling octavo) without being lofers. This was their way of computing the matter, againft which having nothing to object, I locked up the papers in my cabinet, where they have lain ever fince. They did indeed offer me better terms, and to print a greater number of copies, if I would be at the trouble of printing it in Englifh, which they thought would be more univerfally read, out of dillike to the bifhop; but, befides that I cared not to be at the pains of Englifhing it, I thought it below the fubject to print it is any other. language, but that in which his was wrote, and fo wholly declined it.
* 1. 


## ( 357 )

parifh*, who, upon my coming from Hampfire, told me the following ftory, which I give on his authority, for I never enquired farther into it-That his Fector, the reverend Dr. Nichols, acquainted the bifhop, that he had a gentleman in this parih, who defigned fhortly to publifh a confutation of his Hebrew metre. The bifiop alked whether he was equal to the talk? and was anfwered, that he was thought fo by all that knew him, and that he was the perfon who had wrote the Jewifh hiftory, wherein he had given a greater character of the $\mathrm{He}-$ brew poetry than his lordfhip feemed to do in his book, and that he was one of the perfons concerned in the writing of the Univerfal Hiftory. The bifhop then afked his name, and being told that he called himfelf Pfalmanazar, expreffed himfelf with fome warmth to the company, that there was nevera Jew of them all that underftood any ihing of Hebrew, much lefs of the facred poetry; and being told that I was no Jew, bit in all appearance an honeft and ftrict churchman, who would doubtlefs 'ufe his ${ }^{3}$ ordhip with the refpect due to蒥: St. Luke's, Old-Atreet.
his character; he appeared a little better fa-tisfied ${ }_{5}$ and willing to fufpend his judgment, till he faw what I had to fay againft him. And hère I cannot forbear making an obfervation, or two, on his lordhip's fpeech, taking the fory for true, which I am the mores inclined to believe to be fo, becaufel he was! always known to have a fingular contempt of the Jews, fo far as related to. their knowledge of the Hebrew tongue. The one is, that his mean opinion of them muft be owing to his frall acquaintance with them; otherwife he might have found in London feveral of them very learned in that tongue, (befides a much greater number abroad, efpecially among the northern ones) and who, bating their different interpretations of thofe main prophecies which relate to the Mefflah, could have difplayed to him a much greater and deeper fkill in that facred tongue, than he appears to have had, by any thing one can find in bis book. The other is, how his lordhip came to take Salmanyar for a Jewih, inftead of an Affyrian pame; for as the monarch fo called, was one of thofe monarchs who carried away part of Ifraei
captives into Affyria; a Jew would as foon call a fon of his Beelzebub, as Salmahazar, or Nabuchadnezzar.
However, the abovementioned fory, as vell as the expectation which my friends in Hamphire, Surry, and London, were In, to fee my anfwer to him, gave me no fmall regret, left my not publiffing it fhould be interpreted in favour of his performance, or as my yielding the point to him, as not being able to confute him. And could I have afforded it, I would have run the hazard of printing it at my own charge; for I was above doing it by fubfcription, it being fo fmall a thing as a pamphlet of at moft eight octavo fheets; and much more loth was $I$, all the above things confidered; to let a work feemingly calculated to depreciate the excellence of the facred poetry of the Old Teftament, to go uncenfured; efpecially as I had fo many ftrong objections ready levelled againft it. At length a thought came into my mind, as 1 was then preparing new materials for the fecond part of the Jewifh hiftory, to refume that fubject there. And this I thought, I was fo much better intided to

## ( 360 )

do, if it were but in defence of what I had faid in the firft part in praife of the H. brew poetry, and which was, in mof cafcu, quite oppofite to the character, thich 'l lordhip gave of it in his book, The collecting, and compleating of the canon of the facred books by Ezra, and other infpired writers, and their appointing of the proper leffons, pfalms, \&c. for the divine worlhip, gave me a fair opportunity for it, which I was the more ready to take, as I knew that it would be read by many more people in fuch a work as that, than in a Latin pamphlet, and would of courfe more effectually expofe the abfurdity of his pretended new-found metre, ạ̀s well as the unfeemly freedom he hath given himfelf in altering and mutilating the facred text for the fake of it. I therefore refolved to take notice, in juftice to his lordhip, of all juft, laudable, and ufeful difcoveries he had made on that fubject in the text, and to throw the main part of my objections againft the reft of his book in along note, in the moft fuccinct and impartial manner I could, in hopes that the fetting both forth, as it were, in one view, might prcably
excite fome who had more learning and
$\rangle$ leifure than I , to follow the hints there given, las the moft likely means for compleating thie defired difcovery, to which his lordflip pad in a great meafure opened the way, though he had fo unhappily mifcarried in the end. The difficulty was how to con-

- tract my materials fo as not to over-fwell that part of the work, as it muft have done if I had brought every thing into it, which I had wrote on that fubject, and this obliged me to ftrike off near two, thirds of them, and to confine myfelf to the moft material points; fuch as would moft effectually anfwer the two main ends I had in view; viz. the exploding the bihop's new metre, and giving the curious reader, that would go about it, a clue to find out the original one of the facred books; for as to what I defigned to have faid in praife of the Hebrew poetry, had the fubject been printed feparately, it was the lefs neceflary here, as I had already expatiated fo much upon it in the fint volume. Somes of the proprietors and authors were-indeed againft my defign, not only as it would fwell the chapter beyond its length, but likewife as B b the


## ( 362 )

the fubject in queftion appeared to them, foreign to the reft of its contents; but , I had the pleafure not only to carry my point againf them, but likewife to have the performance commended by feveral. learned men as well- as by all my friends; infomuch that upon my confulting: feveral of them, whether I might not in the fecond or octavo edition (in which we were obliged to contract our materials, in order to reduce the whole within the propofed limits) either wholly omit or content myfelf with a fhort mention of what I had done more at large in the folio; they advifed me by no means to curtail the main fubject, though I might, they thought, eraze here and there an explanatory or critical note, which I readily complied with.
Soon after I had concluded my laft part of the Ancient Hiftory, the proprietors and authors had fome meetings together to confult upon the going on with the Modern, and feveral plans were ppopofed by different perfons of learning, and capacity. . The misfortune was, that this part likewife was to be confined within the compars of .twenty

## ( $33_{3}^{6}$ )

twenty volumes, of the fame bulk with the Ancient, and thefe gentlemen differed fo much in the proportion they allowed to each refpective country or kingdom, that Jwe could fee but little likelihood of mak:" ing any tolerablé computation, either of what the whole might reafonably amount to, or of what number of neets might be properly allowed to each hiftory. As for me, the more I confidered the great ex+ tent of the work, and the number of empires and kingdoms which bad not fo much as been touched upon in the Ancient part, fuch as Turkey, India, the great Mogul, Tartary, China, Japan, \&c. the - greateft part of Africa, and the whole tract of America, to fay nothing of Ruffia and feveral other northern countries in Europe; the more I was perfuaded of the imporfibility of reducing the whole within fo fmall a number of volumes, unlefs it was done rather by way of epitome, than of compleat, though ever fo fuccinct, a hiftory. Eyt though this appeared ftill more vifible by the fmall number of Cheets which thefe plans, however different, allotted to moft parts of the work, and mutt have.

## ( 364 )

received by almoft every reader, at the firft view, yet the proprietors who had their particular reafons for fixing upon that number of volumes, would by no means conpent to have it exceeded. This however. occafioned fome demur, during which fome of the beft judges in this kingdom, and out of it , were confulted, as well as about the propereft method of beginn: : and purfuing this modern part.

## FIN IS.

## ||||||||||||||||||| <br> 00021349

Digitized with financial assistance from the Government of Maharashtra on 25 June, 2016



[^0]:    G 3
    of

[^1]:    * In that fabulous account I gave of myfelf, prefixed to the hiftory of Formofa, I pretended to have been feized here for taking a plan of the fortifications of the place, which was abfolutely falfe; for though I had done fo more than once in my native country, where I could give no umbrage, I was not fo ftupid as to do fo in this; neither

